



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1276.15



HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY



ITALIAN

CONVERSATION-GRAMMAR.

Levina Buoncuore Urbino

BY L. B. CUORE.



BOSTON:

S. R. URBINO, 13, SCHOOL STREET.

NEW YORK: F. W. CHRISTERN. PHILADELPHIA: F. LEYPOLDT.

BALTIMORE: J. S. WATERS. CINCINNATI: R. CLARKE & CO.

CHICAGO: S. C. GRIGGS & CO.

1865.

7276.15

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY

1865. July 27

Gift of
the Publisher.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1864, by

S. R. URBINO,

in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts.

BOSTON:

STEREOTYPED AND PRINTED BY JOHN WILSON AND SON,
No. 15, Water Street.

1578
43-195-
26

P R E F A C E.

THIS Grammar, based on that of Robello and others, claims to be all that is necessary for the study of the elements of the Italian language.

Great pains have been taken to present the verbs in a clear, concise manner ; and though, for the sake of easy comparison, they are placed at the end of the book, the student is requested to study a part of them with every lesson.

It is hoped that this little work will fill the place for which it is intended.

THE AUTHOR.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
ITALIAN GRAMMAR	1
CHAPTER I.	
PRONUNCIATION.	1
ETYMOLOGY	15
CHAPTER II.	
THE ARTICLE	16
CHAPTER III.	
UNION OF THE ARTICLES AND PREPOSITIONS	21
CHAPTER IV.	
THE NOUN	26
CHAPTER V.	
THE PLURAL OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES	32
CHAPTER VI.	
THE CASES OF NOUNS	40
CHAPTER VII.	
PRONOUNS	46
CHAPTER VIII.	
PRONOUNS: PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE	55

CHAPTER IX.		PAGE
THE ADJECTIVE		61
CHAPTER X.		
ADJECTIVES: THEIR COMPARATIVES		67
CHAPTER XI.		
THE ADJECTIVES: SUPERLATIVES		72
CHAPTER XII.		
AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES		76
CHAPTER XIII.		
THE NUMERAL ADJECTIVES		82
CHAPTER XIV.		
RELATIVE PRONOUNS		89
CHAPTER XV.		
POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS		96
CHAPTER XVI.		
DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS		103
CHAPTER XVII.		
INDEFINITE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS		109
CHAPTER XVIII.		
INDEFINITE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS (continued)		115
CHAPTER XIX.		
THE PREPOSITIONS, <i>Di</i> , <i>A</i> , <i>Da</i>		121

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

vii

CHAPTER XX.

	PAGE
THE PREPOSITIONS <i>Con, In, Per</i>	129

CHAPTER XXI.

THE PREPOSITIONS (continued)	135
--	-----

CHAPTER XXII.

THE VERBS <i>Essere</i> and <i>Avere</i>	141
--	-----

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE VERBS AND THEIR SYNTAX	146
--------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE VERB: THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	153
--	-----

CHAPTER XXV.

THE INFINITIVE, GERUND, PRESENT AND PAST PARTICIPLES	159
--	-----

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE VERBS <i>Andare, Dare, Fare, and Stare</i>	166
--	-----

CHAPTER XXVII.

ADVERBS.	171
------------------	-----

CHAPTER XXVIII.

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS	179
--	-----

VERBS.

AUXILIARY VERBS	186
REGULAR VERBS	188
IRREGULAR VERBS	214
DEFECTIVE VERBS	246
PROVERBS	259
IDIOMS	263
VOCABULARY	266
INDEX.	275

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR teaches the principles of the Italian language. These relate, —

1. To its written characters;
2. To its pronunciation;
3. To the classification and derivation of its words;
4. To the construction of its sentences;
5. To its versification.

The first part is called ORTHOGRAPHY; the second, ORTHOEPEY; the third, ETYMOLOGY; the fourth, SYNTAX; and the fifth, PROSODY.

CHAPTER I.

PRÒNUNCIATION.

The Italian alphabet consists of twenty-two letters : —

A, a; B, b; C, c; D, d; E, e; F, f; G, g; H, h; I, i; J, j; L, l; M, m; N, n; O, o; P, p; Q, q; R, r; S, s; T, t; U, u; V, v; Z, z.

The letters *k*, *w*, *x*, and *y*, sometimes occur, but only in words derived from foreign sources.

SOUNDS OF THE ITALIAN LETTERS.

In Italian, every vowel must be distinctly sounded. The five vowels, *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*, are thus pronounced : —

SOUNDS OF THE VOWELS.

A, as	. . . . .	in father;
E, as	. . . . . a	in made;
I, as	. . . . . ee	in eel;
O, as	. . . . . o	in Rome;
U, as	. . . . . ou	in soup.

REMARKS.

E has two different sounds, — open and close :

E open, as in MATE, NAME :

Tema, subject.

Venti, winds.

Avéna, oats.

E close, as in GREY, PAIN :

Tema, fear.

Venti, twenty.

Mela, apple.

O has likewise two sounds, — open and close :

O open, as in CORD :

Botta, blow.

Rósa, rose.

O close, as in BONE :

Botte, cask.

Óra, hour.

To become thoroughly acquainted with the open and close sounds of *E* and *O*, three things are especially necessary : 1. *Practice* ; 2. PRACTICE ; 3. PRACTICE.

SOUNDS OF THE CONSONANTS.

The greater portion of the consonants in the Italian language are pronounced as in English. The following are the exceptions : —

C, which takes the sound of *ch* before *i* or *e* : otherwise it sounds like *k*.

H, which is used only to harden the sound of *c* and *g* before *e* and *i*, and to distinguish different parts of speech. It is never sounded.

J sounds like *ee*.

Q is never used without *u*, and is sounded like *g* in the English word *quire*.

R, which is sounded as if rolled on the point of the tongue.

Z, which is sounded like *ts* and *ds*.

L, M, N, and R are liquids, or semivowels.

COMPOUND SOUNDS.

CH	sounds	. . .	like <i>k</i> in English.
GH	"	. . .	hard as in English.
GN	"	. . .	like <i>n</i> in the word ONION.
GLI	"	. . .	like <i>ll</i> in the word WILLIAM.
SCI	"	. . .	like SHE.
SCE	"	. . .	like SHA.
SCH	"	. . .	like SK.

Cc, followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *tch* in the English word *match*.

Gg, followed by *e, i*, sounds like *dg* in the word *lodge*.

The exact sound of the letters can be obtained only by hearing good pronunciation, and by repeating after the teacher. Three or four lessons would, however, prove sufficient to an apt scholar to enable him to overcome all the difficulties of Italian pronunciation.

But, as an Italian teacher is not always to be found, we shall endeavor to give a few concise and practical rules, by which the student may make himself familiar with the language of Dánte, Alfíeri, Boccáccio, Ariósto, Tásso, Petrárca, Mafféi, Manzóni, and a host of other writers, whose works will never cease to form part of the *belles lettres* of every country.

Diphthongs, as we understand them in English, do not exist in Italian. Dr. Bachi, in his excellent Grammar, speaks of diphthongs and triphthongs, by which he means such a blending of the vowels that *each* is but faintly heard.

The apostrophe (') indicates that a vowel is omitted; as, *l'óro*, instead of *lo óro*, the gold; *dell' ánima*, instead of *délla ánima*, of the soul; &c.

The grave accent (`) is used on the last vowels of some words; as, *città* (formerly *cittade*): or as a termination which must be pronounced sharply; as, *avrà, amò, sò*.

EXERCISE IN PRONUNCIATION.

A	Cása, música, dánza.
A	Felicità, darà, sarà.
E (close)	Béne, pedóne.
E (open)	Téma, péna, érba.
J	Princípj, provérbj, compéndj.
I	Inímico, cíbo, ripiéno.
O (close)	Córso, amóre, fónte.
O (open)	Póvero, tólto, pópolo.
U	Dúo, túo, súo.
CE	Cénto, céce, felice. .
CI	Pacífico, diéci, cíbo.
CH	Chiódo, chi, cha.
GA, GO, GU	Gámba, págo, gústo.
GE, GI	Germáno, dígitto, legióne.
GN	Campáña, magnético.
GLI (liquid)	Fíglio, fíglia, gli, méglío.
S (strong)	Sánto, stúdio, sénso.
S (soft)	Guísa, cása, cósa.
SCA, SCO, SCU	Scábro, scoláre, scúola.
SCE, SCI	Scéna, scínto, fascía.
Zz (z like <i>ts</i>)	Nózze, fazzolétto.
Zz (z like <i>ds</i>)	Azzúrro, mézzo.

REMARKS.

Double consonants must be *very* distinctly pronounced, thus : *imménso*, *im-mén-so* ; *innocénte*, *in-no-cénte* ; &c.

—Every syllable must contain a vowel, and cannot receive more than one consonant after it in the same syllable, but may be preceded by one, two, or three. The last syllable of all Italian words ends with a vowel. The exceptions are *il*, the ; *con*, with ; *non*, no ; *per*, by ; and a few abbreviations.

READING EXERCISE IN PRONUNCIATION.

To impress the following exercise on the memory of the pupil, many English words are omitted. The pupil is required to fill them up : this can be done with the help of the dictionary.

LA FANCIULLA DI BUON ÍNDOLE.

THE LITTLE GIRL ANIABLE.

La Marchésa Giúlia andáva in carrettélla a far vísitá álla
 The went little carriage to make to the
 sorélla che stáva in vília, e avéva con se solaménte una
 sister who was town, and had with her only a
 cameriéra e uno staffiére. Una ruóta della carrettélla si rúppe,
 chambermaid and a footman. wheel of the broke,
 e benchè per búona sórte non rimanésse feríto nessúno,
 although by good fortune remained wounded no one,
 bisógno scéndere, e adattársi di andáre a piédi ad un
 it was necessary to descend (adapt) prepare to go on foot
 villággio lontáno di lì quási tre míglia. La Marchésa
 distant from there almost three miles.
 mandò innánzi il servitóre per fáre avvisáre un carrozziére
 sent before the servant for to make to give notice carriage-maker
 che venísse ad accomodáre la carrettélla; il cochiére rimáse
 which should come mend coachman stayed
 con i caválli, e la signóra prése a bráccio la cameriéra, e si
 with the horses lady took arm
 avviò.
 set forward.

Éra sul mezzogiórno, e il sóle dáva lóro móltá nója;
 It was the mid-day sun gave to them much inconvenience;
 dimodochè la signóra, non-avvézza a cammináre a piédi, présto
 so that accustomed walk on foot very soon
 présto si straccò, e per riposársi ebbe ad uscir di stráda, ed
 was tired for to repose had go out street
 entráre in un práto dóve érano délle quérce. Là si mise a
 enter meadow where there were of the oaks. There she put herself
 sedére all' ómbra sótto uno di quégli álberi, e guardò con
 sit to the shade under one of those trees observed
 piacére il bel prospétto che le éra dinánzi. A un trátto élla
 pleasure fine prospect which her was before. all at once she
 víde passár pel práto úna ragazzína con un fastéllo di légna
 saw to pass through little girl faggot of wood
 in cápo.
 on head.

Ragazzina più bella di quella non era mai passata sott'
 Girl more beautiful than that was ever before
 occhio alla Marchesa. Le sue carni paravano latte e rose, i suoi
 eye her cheeks appeared milk roses her
 grand' occhi celesti erano pieni di dolcezza, e sotto una pezzuola
 great eyes blue were full sweetness under handkerchief
 di cotone giallo, annodata intorno al capo, venivan fuori le
 cambric yellow, tied about the head, came out
 ciocche de' suoi biondi capelli, e davan grazia vieppiù a quella
 tufts fair hair gave grace much more that
 bella fisionomia. La signora non aveva figli, e se ne
 had children herself of it
 addolorava. A veder dunque quella cara fanciullina, non potè
 grieved. see then dear girl was able
 a meno d' invidiare la madre sua; e disse alla cameriera di andare
 at least to envy said go
 a chiamar la bambina e condurla. Questa si avvicinò con un
 call child conduct her to her. advanced
 contegno modesto ma franco, posò il suo fastello, fece un
 countenance but put down made
 inchino alla Marchesa, e le domandò se aveva qualcosa da
 bow to her asked if she had something to
 comandarle. Niente, rispose la dama; voglio soltanto parlare
 command of her. Nothing, answered lady; I wish only to speak
 un po' con te: mettiti a sedere qui sull' erba, e prima di tutto
 little thee: put thyself sit here grass before all
 dimmi come tu ti chiami? Rosa Lúci, al comando suo.
 tell me how thou thyself callest? at your.
 Il babbo e la mamma gli hai vivi? Il mio babbo è morto ch' è
 papa then hast thou alive? my is dead
 un pezzo; la mia mamma ha me sola e si sta qui in un villaggio
 has alone is here
 vicino. M' immagino che non siate molto felici. Oh, perchè?
 near. I imagine may be very happy. why?
 Noi ci vogliamo bene, e siamo contente. Ma mi pare
 We ourselves wish well are to me it seems
 che voi siate molto povere!
 you are very poor!
 Noi ci guadagniamo il pane con le nostre fatiche:
 We to ourselves gain the bread the our labors:

abbiamo delle galline che ci fanno le uova; e la mia mamma
we have some hens which make eggs

oggi è andata al paese a venderle, ed i quattrini si sèrbano
to-day is gone to the country to sell them the money serves

per la pigione di casa. E in che lavorate voi per guadagnarvi
rent house. work you gain

da mangiare? Nell' estate noi andiamo a sarchiare, e dopo la
to eat? In the summer we go to weed after

mietitura andiamo a spigolare. Ma se durate tanta fatica,
harvest glean. But if endure so much fatigue,

mangiate male e andate mal vestite, come potete voi essere
you eat badly go ill dressed, how can you be

contente? Noi a tutte queste cose non ci pensiamo
We (of all these things not ourselves think

nemmèno; quando s' ha fame si ringrazia Iddio di avere di
at all; when one has hunger one thanks God to have of

che satollarsi, e ogni cosa par buona. Se noi non abbiamo
what satisfy every thing seems good. If we not have

vestiti belli, siamo pure coperte e decenti; sono solamente i
clothes fine we are yet covered are only

pigri che vanno sempre strappati e sudici; la mamma pensa a
lazy who go always ragged dirty thinks

rassettare le nostre robuciole, ed io già comincio ad aiutarla.
to repair our clothes I already begin to help her.

Rosa, vuoi venir meco a quel villaggio? Volontieri: tanto la
wilt come with me to that Willingly whilst

mia mamma fino a stasera non torna; ma bisogna che
until this evening returns it is necessary

intanto io porti a casa mia questo fastello. E se lo comprassi
meanwhile carry house my if it should buy

io? Allora poi! ma costa sei soldi, veh! Eccoli sei soldi
I? Then but costs six cents, hum! Behold

(rispose la Marchesa alzandosi), posa lì il tuo fastello, e vieni
rising, put there come

con noi. Ma s' ella l' ha comprato, bisogna ch' io glielo porti
But if you have it bought, it is necessary that I it carry

(e voleva ripigliarlo), ma la Marchesa glielo impedì, e prese
she wished to take it again prevented took

la via del villaggio, dove arrivata, entrò in un albergo (hotel)
way where entered

d' apparenza assai decante.
appearance enough

Lo staffiére vénne a dirle che per accomodàre la sua
 The footman came to tell her mend
 carrózza gli bisognávano cinque ore. La Marchésa ordinò il
 needed five hours. ordered
 pránzo, l' ostéssa la condússe in úna stánza pulíta óve éssa entrò
 dinner hostess conducted room clean where she entered
 insiéme con le áltre dúe; diéde pói segretaménte dégli órdini
 together other two; gave then secretly of the orders
 álla cameriéra che uscì per eseguirli. In quésto frattémpto la
 went out execute. meanwhile
 Marchésa continuò a parlàre con Rosína, e si trovò conténta
 to speak found
 sémpre più del candóre délle súe rispóste, e sopratútto délla súa
 always more candor her answers above all
 tenerézza per la própria mádre.
 tenderness own

La cameriéra tórno càrica de' vestíti che avéva compráti nel
 returned laden clothes she had bought
 villággio; spogliò, per órdine délla padróna, la piccína, e le
 undressed, by order mistress little one
 mise indósso úna camícia di cotóne, un sottanino ricamáto, e
 put upon her shirt cambric petticoat embroidered
 úna vestína di sèta colór vèrde chiáro, con un ornáménto di
 gown silk green light ornament
 merlétti colór di rósa; pói le acconciò i capélli, còlle tréce le
 lace then dressed hair braids
 formò una spécie di coróna sul cápo, e vi póse una ghirlánda di
 formed sort crown head put garland
 fióri. Rósa dappríma facéva la ritrósa, e si vergognáva a
 flowers. at first made shy was ashamed
 vedérsi vestíre da signóra; ma pói, siccóme éra di naturále
 to see to dress then, as she was by
 mólto compiacénte, si sottomise a tútto. Quandó fu assettáta
 very complaisant submitted all. When she was fitted out
 per béne, la Marchésa la condússe davánti állo spécchio, e le
 fully her conducted before her mirror and to her
 disse che si guardásse. La piccína si guardò sott' ócchio
 said that herself she should look at. little one regarded
 néllo spécchio, sorrise ed arrosì.
 smiled and became red.

Che ne dici eh! disse la Marchésa; non ci avrésti
 What to it sayest thou would have

gústo di stár sémpré vestíta in quéstó módo? Sì; ma cóme si
 taste to be always dressed manner? Yes how

può con quéstí ábiti andár a tagliár l' érba e sarchiáre? Vèdi, se
 can clothes to go cut grass to weed? See if

tu fòssi la mía figliuóla, com' io lo desidereréi, tu non faticherésti
 thou wert daughter as I it should desire fatigue thyself

più in quéstó módo; tu imparerésti a léggere, scrívere, e
 more shouldst learn to read write

cantáre; e ti rimarébbe ánche témpo per divertírti; io ti
 to sing to thee would remain even time to amuse

meneréi a spásso in carrózza, e ti faréi giocáre in tante
 would lead would make to amuse so many

manière. A me, la mía mámma ha détto sémpré che Dío sa
 manners (ways). To me has said always that God knows

quel che fa. Dío ha volúto che élla fósse Marchésa, ed io
 what he does. wished you should be

úna contadína, ma io pregherò Dío di dárle úna figliolína, ed
 will pray to give you

élla è tánto buóna che il signóre la farà conténta.
 you are so lord you will make

La signóra Giúlia non si saziáva di accarezzáre Rosína:
 satisfied to caress

faceva ammiráre álla cameriera la gentilézza déi suói módi, le
 she made admire gentleness

grázie délla persóna; e quéstá, per far la córte álla padróna la
 she to please the her

lodáva ánche più di lei, e la Rosína ascoltava quésté lódi tútta
 praise than she heard

confúsa. Vénnero ad avvisáre che il pránzo éra all' órdine:
 They came inform dinner was ready

la Marchésa passò in úna piccóla sála con Rósa per máno, e la
 passed into a little parlor hand he

fèce metteré a sédere a távola accánto a sè. La póvera
 caused to put sit table at the side

fanciullína si vergognáva talménte, che quási piangéva ma
 bashful so almost to weep

vedéndosi tratátta con tánta bontà, cominciò a rassicurársi un
 seeing herself treated kindness began re-assure

póco,

La minéstra le párve si buóna, che ne mangiò assái;
 soup to her seemed of it she eat enough
 e il léssò che vénne dópo, le párve una vivánda squisíta; e si
 roast meat came after to her seemed food exquisite
 saziò affátto; dimodochè, quándo vénnero in-távola gli áltri
 satiated so that when came the other
 piátti per quánto la Signóra la pregásse, non potè più mangiáre.
 dishes begged was able to eat.
 Il víno pói non vi fu módo di fargliélo bère; appéna l'èbbe
 wine then there was to make to drink; hardly had
 ella assaggiáto si riscósse, e chiése che per carità le déssero
 she tasted shuddered asked for charity her should give
 dell' ácqua. Allorchè élla víde veníre le frúttà e i dólci, mandò
 When saw to come fruit sweets uttered
 un grído di sorpréssa. Un áltro pránzo! eh! Élla potéva
 cry surprise. dinner could
 chiamáre tútti i ragázzì del villággio, v' éra da sfamárlì tútti.
 call children there was to satisfy
 Ebbéne Rósa, se tu vúoi veníre a stár con me, tu sarái
 Well if thou wishest to come to be shalt be
 trattáta tútti i giòrni cóme óggi, e ánche méglìo. Per me,
 treated days as to-day even better.
 Signóra mía, faréi tútto per compiacér-la; ma égli è
 I would do to please you
 impossíbile ch' io láschi la nja mámma, che non ha áltro che
 should leave has other than
 me per ajutár-la e vegliár-la quánd' è maláta. Io pagherò úna
 to help her to care for her when sick. will pay
 dónna perchè la sérvà. Sì, ma quéstà dónna non le vorrà
 woman for her serve (that she may serve her). would wish
 béne cóme io gliéne vóglìo e la servirà solaménte per
 well as to her wish her would serve only
 guadagnáre. La mía mámma ha présò cúra di me quánd' io
 to gain. taken care
 éra piccína; óra ch' io sóno gránde, non vóglìo abandonár-la;
 I wish
 quándo élla sarà véccia, io lavorerò per dár-le da mangiáre
 will-be old will work to give her to eat
 cóme élla facéva per me quándo io non mi potéva guadagnáre il
 as did was able to gain the

páne. La Marchésa era inteneríta dái sentiménti di quésa
bread. affected by the

fanciúlla, e non ébbe più il corággio d' insistere: le permíse di
had permitted

riprendére la sua vesticcióla, e tornár dálla mámma, che dovéva
to take again dress return ought

cominciáre ad éssere in pensiéro per léi. Innánzi di lasciarla
to begin to be thought for her. Before allowing her

partíre, l' abbracciò, ed empì le sue tásche di quéi pasticcínì
to depart, she embraced her filled pockets cakes

e di quélle pastíne che éssa non avéva neppure assaggiáte.
that pastry had not yet been eaten.

La Rosína paréva un uccellétto scappáto dállé máni di un
appeared like a bird escaped hands

ragázzo che lo volésse ingabbiáre: avéva présò i súoi zóccoli
boy who it wished to cage: she had taken wooden shoes

in máno, e così scálza corréva tánto lésta, che la cameriéra, a
hand so barefooted ran so quickly to

cui la marchésa avéva comandáto di tenérle diétro, durò fatica
whom keep found it difficult

a non la pérder di vísta. Éssa nonostante arrivò al casoláre
her to lose from sight. notwithstanding arrived house

quási subító dópo Rosa, la trovò nélle bráccie délla sua
soon after her she found in the arms

mámma, álla quále élla raccontáva che úna bella signóra la
related

voléva condúrre con sè, prometténdole vestítì bellì e tre
wished to take her with her, promising her clothes fine three

pránzi ógni giòrno. Io nondiméno son venúta vía (aggiungéva
dinners every day. nevertheless am come added

élla), perchè sebbéne io vóglia bene a quélle signóra, la* non è
although wish well

poi la mia mámma.
then

La cameriéra dísse a quélle contadína che álla súa padróna
told

éra piaciúto tánto il buon cuóre délla Rosína, che voléva
pleased wished

* La for ella, she.

assicurárla una pensíone di dugénto fránchi, e al suo ritórno
to secure to her two hundred francs return

alla città ne avrébbe segnáto il contrátto: le lasciò l' indirízso,
would have to sign she left her direction

e le racconandò di venírla a vedére la doménica próssima, e
advised to come to see Sunday next

menár con sè la Rosína. La dónna gliélo promíse.
to bring with her it to her promised.

La Marchésa Giúlia, benchè non fósse avvézza a sentírsi
although accustomed to hear herself

contradíre, siccóme d' áltra pártè élla éra generósa e di cuór
contradicted, on other hand heart

buóno riconóbbe che non avéa potestà di dispórre di Rósa cóntro
recognized power dispose against

il súo volére, nè di obbligárla a preferír lei álla própria mádre;
will, nor oblige her to prefer her to her own

perciò si determinò a fárle in áltro módo tútto quel béne ch'
therefore determined another manner all the good

élla potéva. Accólse dúnque le contadíne con móltà affabilità,
she could. She approached then

e dópo ch' élla ébbe parláto con la mádre, non si maravigliò più
after had spoken was astonished

délle qualità buóne délla figliuóla. Quélla dónna in fátti éra
daughter. That lady fact was

tútta probità e delicatézza: conténta del súo státo, non invidiáva
all delicacy state envy

niénte i ricchi, i quáli dicéva éssa, son pur sottopósti, cóme tútti
any one rich who said she are exposed

gli áltri uómini, alle malattíe ed ai dispiacéri, e dovránno réndere
diseases and to misfortunes ought to render

un grán cónto délle lóro ricchézze, dóve non se ne sérvano in
account riches where serve (use) for

béne.
good.

La Marchésa féce álla Rosína il regaló che le avéa
made present for her she had

destináto, ed érano tre vaccherélle, le quáli élla féce consegnáre
three young cows which she made to consign

állà mádre perchè le conducésse con se: ed aggiúnse, éssere
should conduct added. to be (it was)

súo desidério che la piccína non andásse più a lavoráre álla
her desire should go work

campágna, ma badásse soltáto a véndere il látte e le uóva.
country should care only to sell milk eggs.

Siccóme pói, diss' ella, non déve Rosína stár mái disoccupáta,
But then, said ought to be ever unoccupied,

andrà álla scuóla del vóstro villággio, il restánte délla giornáta
shall go school day

lo passerà da úna maéstra che le insegnerà a far la trína: álle
pass teacher her will teach to make lace

spése che occorreránno per la súa istruzíone penserò io. Rósa
expense shall incur I will think.

e la súa mádre volévano ringraziáre la Signóra, ma vínite dälle
wished to thank

lácrime non potérono articoláre paróla.
tears were able word.

Quésto benefizio non potéva éssere fáto a persóne più dégne:
was able made any one more worthy

l' educazióne sviluppò nélla fanciullína tútte le buóne qualità
developed

che tralucévano in léi fin dall' infánzia. Un áno dópo élla
shone her from A year after

portò in regálo álla Marchésa úna trína lavoráta con sómma
carried present lace made

finézza ed éra tánta da guarníre un vestíto. La Marchésa sèppe
enough to trim dress. knew

che quélla famíglia, résa da léi agiáta, risparmiáva per
rendered saved

socórrere i bisognósi, e spiáva tútte le ocasióni per beneficáre.
succor needy spied (watched)

Rosa éra entráta appéna ne' quíndici ánni, quándo la
entered scarcely fifteenth year

Marchésa cádde in una gravíssima malattía: súo maríto éra
fell in very serious sickness husband

in viággio: e non avéva áltro che la súa génte di servízio che
absent she had no others than people service who

l' assistésse. Lo sèppe Rosína, e súbito, lasciándo úna súa vicína
her could assist. knew left neighbor

a guárdia délla cása e délle vaccherélle, partì per la città
guard cows, she set out

insiéme còlla mánna. Arriváte che fúrono, andárono álla
 together with Arrived they were, they went
 cámara délla Marchésa. Éssa éra fuóri di sè, nè riconoscéva
 chamber She was out of her mind, neither recognized
 alcúno; e da quéllo státo di delírio, cadéva poi in un profóndo
 no one fell
 letárgo che paréva mórtá. Tútta la génte di cása éra costernáta,
 appeared dead. people confounded
 la cameriéra, sommaménte affezionáta álla súa padróna, non
 greatly attached
 sapéva far áltro che piángere, e non éra búona a nùlla. La
 knew to do than to weep she was for nothing.
 búona Lúci féce rizzáre accánto al létto délla signóra un
 made to be placed by the side bed
 letticiúolo: ed élla e Rosína vegliávano la signóra úna nótte
 little bed watched
 per úna.

I médici s' intendévano con lóro per la cúra dell' ammaláta;
 depended upon them care sick (lady)
 e tútto éra adempíto con la mássima puntualità. In cápó a nóve
 fulfilled greatest At the end of nine
 giòrni la malattía pigliò búona piéga: la Marchésa ritornò in sè e
 days took turn recovered
 conóbbe quánto dovéva állo zélo e all' affétto délle sue amoróse
 knew owed loving
 assisténti. La póvera Rosína éra scoloríta dälle inquietézze e
 pale
 dälle nottáte perdúte; ma i suói ócchi abbattúti ripigliárono
 -nights lost (sleepless nights) languid took again
 la lóro vivacità appéná élla cominciò a speráre nélia guarigióne
 as soon as began hope cure
 délla súa benefattrice. Ella con le súa premúre rése méno
 cares rendered
 spiacevole álla signóra il témpo délla convalescénza; óra le
 disagreeable now
 leggéva un bel líbro, ora le raccontáva quálche fátto interessánte
 read then related fact
 accadúto nel suo villággio: voléva ánche pensáre a vegliárla,
 happened wished also to take care of her

nè permettéva che áltri le facésse i bródi e preparásse le
others should make broths
 medicíne. In quésto témpo il maríto della Marchésa tornò,
returned
 ed éssa, ritornáta in perfétta salúte, gli mostrò quánto dovéva a
returned health showed she owed
 Rosína ed álla mádre di lei, e gli dísse che oramáí non le dáva
now gave (had)
 più il cuóre di separársi da lóro. Concertárono dúnque di
heart They agreed then
 mèttere la Lúci alla direzióne délla cása, sicúri che non
put sure
 potévano affidárla méglío; la figlia pói non dovéva avér áltro
were able should have
 títoló che di compágna ed amíca délla Marchésa. Voi vi potéte
can
 figuráre, figliúoli miéi, quánto volontiére accettárono ésse tále
children they accepted
 proposizióne.

ET Y M O L O G Y.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

There are *nine* parts of speech in the Italian language :
 — 1. The ARTICLE; 2. The NOUN; 3. The ADJECTIVE;
 4. The PRONOUN; 5. The VERB; 6. The AD-
 VERB; 7. The PREPOSITION; 8. The CONJUNCTION;
 9. The INTERJECTION.

The first five are variable; the four last, invariable.

The change which the first four undergo by means of terminations is called declension: it refers to gender, number, and case.

There are two genders in Italian, — the masculine and the feminine.

There are also two numbers, — the singular and the plural: and four cases, expressing the different relations of words to each other; namely, the nominative, genitive, dative, and accusative.

The nominative case, or the subject, answers to the question *who?* or *what?* as, Who is reading? *The boy.*

The genitive or possessive case answers to the question *whose?* or *of which?* as, Whose book? *The boy's book.*

The dative answers to the question *to whom?* as, To whom shall I give it? *To the boy.*

The accusative or objective case marks the object of an action, and answers to the question *whom?* or *what?* as, Whom or what do you see? I see *the boy, the house.*

CHAPTER II.

THE ARTICLE — L' ARTICOLO.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

LA *doménica sénto* LA *méssa* . On Sunday I attend (*the*) mass.*
 IL *lunedì spéndo* IL *danáro* . On Monday I spend *the* money.
 IL *martedì viéne* LA *sérva* . The servant comes on Tuesday.
 IL *mercoledì stíro* LA *téla* . . On Wednesday I iron *the* linen.
 IL *giovedì págo* IL *camerière* . On Thursday I pay *the* domestic.
 IL *venerdì riscuóto* L' *entráte* . On Friday I receive *the* rent.
 IL *sábato aspétto* IL *sárto* . . I expect *the* tailor on (*the*) Saturday.†

The article is used much more frequently in Italian than in English.

There are two articles, — DEFINITE and INDEFINITE.‡ The Definite has several variations for the sake of euphony.

* In the translation of the Italian examples, words which cannot be expressed are inserted within marks of parenthesis.

† The pupil is requested to commit to memory the Italian words occurring in Rules or Examples, as their meaning will be seldom repeated. The conjugation of the verbs will be found at the end of the book.

‡ The indefinite article, *un, uno, una*, a or an, will be treated of in a subsequent chapter. (See chapter on Numeral Adjectives.)

DEFINITE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR, *il, lo*,* masculine ; *la*, feminine.
 PLURAL, *i, gli (li)*,† masculine ; *le*, feminine.

REMARKS.

I. The article *il*, plural *i*, is most generally used ;
 as, —

Il tempérino, i tempérini ; il sigillo, i sigilli.

The penknife, the penknives ; the seal, the seals.‡

II. The article *lo*, plural *gli*, is placed, — 1st, Before nouns beginning with *s* followed by another consonant ;
 as, —

Lo spécchio, gli spécchi ; lo spirito, gli spiriti.

The mirror, the mirrors ; the spirit, the spirits.

2d, Before nouns commencing with a vowel, eliding the *o*, and replacing it by an apostrophe ; as, —

L' ócchio, gli ócchi ; l' àmico, gli àmici.

The eye, the eyes ; the friend, the friends.

III. The word *déi*, gods, takes the article *gli*. We say, *Il Dío di Abrámo, gli déi del paganésimo* ; the God of Abraham, the gods of the heathen.

IV. *Lo*, or *il*, is written before masculine nouns commencing with *z* ; as, *Lo zío, or il zío*, the uncle ; and after the preposition *per* : *Per lo cuóre, or per il cuóre*, for the heart. But, in speaking, *il* is generally used, except in the phrases *per lo più*, at most ; *per lo méno*, at least.

V. *La* before a feminine noun takes *le* in the plural ;
 as, —

La penna, le pénne ; la stánza, le stánze.

The pen, the pens ; the room, the rooms.

* The Italians have taken the articles *il* and *lo* from the first and last syllable of the ablative Latin *illo*. In their use, euphony alone is consulted : *lo l bro, lo padre, il l bro, il padre*.

† We find *li*, plural of *il*, in classical works, especially in poetry ; but modern writers use *i* in preference.

‡ The article is given with every noun, so that the pupil may learn the gender of the noun.

The *a* of *la* is elided before a vowel, and replaced by an apostrophe. It, however, takes *le* in the plural; as, —

L' isola, le isole; l' ánima, le ánime.

The island, the islands; the soul, the souls.

VI. The article *il* loses the *i* when it is preceded by the words *che, tra, fra, e*; as, *Tra'l sì e'l no*, between yes and no. Such elision is used only in poetry.

VII. The article *gli* loses the *i* before a noun commencing with *i*; as, *Gl' inférmi*, the infirm.

VIII. The article *le* loses the *e* before a noun beginning with *e*; as, *L' elemósine*, the alms; *l' érbe*, the herbs. The above rules are purely euphonic.

IX. As there are only two genders in Italian, English neuter nouns take the gender of the noun into which they are translated; and the article naturally takes the gender of the noun to which it belongs.

X. They say in Italian, *Vádo in chiésa, in stráda*, etc., I go to church, into the street, etc.; and do not use the article, because the church or street is not designated. But, in *Vádo nélla chiésa di San Cárlo, vádo nélla stráda dóve státe di casa*, — I go into St. Charles' Church, I am going into the street where you dwell, — the article is used because the church and street are defined.

XI. So, likewise, they say, *Vádo in cása, in cámara, a létto, in cucína*; because it is understood that the person speaks of his own house, room, bed, kitchen; which nouns are defined by the circumstances.

XII. It is necessary to use the article in such sentences as the following, where the signification of the noun is limited: —

<i>Vádo —</i>	<i>I am going —</i>
<i>nélla cása di mia mádre . . .</i>	<i>into my mother's house.</i>
<i>nélla cámara di mio pádre . . .</i>	<i>into my father's chamber.</i>
<i>nel létto di suo fratello . . .</i>	<i>in his brother's bed.</i>
<i>nélla cucína del vicino . . .</i>	<i>in the neighbor's kitchen.</i>

XIII. There are cases in which the article may be used or not; as, —

Audácia, fortuna, e virtù, gli Boldness, fortune, and merit
déttero tróno e poténza; or, gave him the sceptre and
L' audácia, la fortuna, e la the power.
virtù, gli déttero il tróno e la
poténza.

In the first case, the nouns are considered independently, without any subsequent idea: in the second case, the article limits the signification of the noun by something relative to each noun understood; thus:—

L' audácia che spiegò in ógni The boldness which he mani-
impréssa, la fortuna che lo fested in all his enterprises,
secondò, gli virtù che lo dis- the fortune which favored
tinse, gli déttero il tróno dèlla him, the merit which dis-
*nazione e la poténza sovrána.** tinguished him, gave him the
 throne of the nation and the
 sovereign power.

XIV. The nouns Mr., Mrs., Miss, take the article, thus: *il Signóre, il Signór dottóre, la Signóra, la Signóra principéssa, la Signorína*. These words do not take an article when they are addressed to the person to whom we are speaking. The word *Signóre* loses the final *e* before a masculine noun.

XV. Proper nouns do not take the article;† as,

* When several nouns come together before or after the verb, and the article is used or omitted before the first of them, this article must be repeated or omitted before every other noun in the sentence.

† Names of kingdoms, provinces, mountains, and rivers, take the article or not, according to the extent of their signification; as, *L' Italia è bella*, Italy is beautiful; *Ha varcato il Po*, he has crossed the Po; *Stira in Italia*, he was in Italy; *Ho visto l' Etna*, I have seen Etna.

Names of islands, cities, lakes, and seas, are generally used without the article; as, *Milla, Girda*.

The names of abstract substances, and those of gems, metals, etc., when used in a generic sense, require the article before them; as, *L' óro è le pírle, e i fiór vermí gli è bi inchí*, the gold and the pearls, and the red and white flowers.

A noun preceded by an adjective takes the article before the adjective; as, *Il grín mile*, the great evil; *Il grín peccato*, the great sin.

All words used as nouns require the article before them; as, *Il bello, il buono*, the beautiful, the good; *Son órta del sí*, I am certain of the affirmative; *Ciascúno rispóse del no*, every one answered in the negative; *Il suo parlár mi piacer*, his conversation pleases me.

When a noun is used in an indeterminate sense, the article is omitted; as, *Non úom, úomo già fúí*, now I am not a man, formerly I was a man.

Michelangelo, Raffaello. But it is generally placed before family names, particularly of illustrious or renowned persons, both male and female; as, *Il Buonarótti, il Sánzio, la Marátti* (the poetess).

XVI. Possessive adjective pronouns often take the article; as, *Il mio, il tuo, il suo, la nostra, la vostra*, etc., my, thy, his, our, your, etc.

XVII. Verbs in the infinitive mood, and adverbs, take the article when they are used substantively; as, —

Il ballare mi sécca; Non sò nè il quándo nè il cóme.
It tires me to dance; I know neither when nor how.

READING LESSON.

L' amóre e la mórte fáanno eguáli i re ed i pastóri.

Love and death make equal kings and shepherds.

La glória è il sólo béne che pòssa tentáre gli uómini.

Glory is only good which is able (can) to tempt men.

Il témpo, che fortífica l' amicizia, indebolisce l' amóre.

Time fortifies friendship, weakens

Le calúnnie sóno cóme le feríte che lásciano sémpré la márgine.

Calumnies are like wounds leave always scar.

La paúra govérna il móndo.

Fear governs world.

La prudénza è la gúida e la padróna délla víta umána.

Prudence guide mistress life² human.¹

EXERCISE UPON THE ARTICLES.

(The) fortune loves (the) youth.

fortúna (f.) ama gioventù (f.).

The scholar cultivates (the) memory.

scoláre (m.) coltíva memória (f.).

The servant (f.) puts out the light.

sérva smórza lúme (m.).

The evening I study the lesson.

séra (f.) stúdio lezióne (f.).

The shoemaker brings the shoes.

calzolaio (m.) pórtá scárpe (f.).

WORDS.

Il páne, the bread.
La cárne, the meat.
Il ríno, the wine.
Le frútta, the fruits.
Lé méle. the apples.
Il fratéllo, the brother.
La péra, the pear.
La péscá, the peach.
Il fíco, the fig.
Il pádre, the father.

Io ho, I have.
Tu hái, thou hast.
Egli ha, he has.
Élla ha, she has.
Non ho, I have not.
Ho io? have I?
Hái tu? hast thou?
Ha égli? has he?
Ha élla? has she?
Non ho io? have I not?

Libro, book. *Sì,* yes. *Che,* what. *Chi,* who.

CONVERSATION.

Ho io la pénna?
Hái tu il temperíno?
Che há mio fratéllo?
Ha lo zío dél Signóre il libro?
Che spéndi tu?
Chi ha compráto la cása?
Che cása ha égli compráto?
Che ha la Signóra?
Chi aspétto il Lunedì?
Che cámara hái?

Sì, tu hái la pénna.
No, non ho il temperíno.
Il fratéllo vóstro ha la cárta.
No, égli nón ha il libro.
Spéndo il danáro.
Il Signór dottóre.
La cása dí mio pádre.
Élla ha lo spécchio.
Aspétto il sárto.
Ho la cucína.

CHAPTER III.

UNION OF THE ARTICLES AND PREPOSITIONS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

I giòrni DELLA settimána . . . The days of the week.
Le stagióni DELL' áno . . . The seasons of the year.
Néllé stráde DELLA città. . . . In the streets of the city.
Il lapis è SULLA távola . . . The pencil is upon the table.
Siámo NEL cuór délla státe . . . We are in midsummer.
La pénna è NEL calamáio . . . The pen is in the inkstand.
Balláte CON LE ragázze . . . Dance with the girls.
Léggo CÓGLI occhiáli . . . I read with (the) spectacles.

UNION OF THE ARTICLES AND PREPOSITIONS.

§ I. If the article is used with one of the prepositions, *di*, of or for; *a*, to or at; *da*, from or by; *in*, in; *con*, with; *su*, upon, — the two monosyllables are joined for euphony.

REMARK. — In connecting the preposition with the article, *di* is changed into *de*, *in* into *ne*, *con* into *co*.

§ II. 1st, Contraction of the article *lo*, and its plural *gli*, with a noun: —

SINGULAR.

<i>Lo</i>	<i>spérpero</i> ,	the havoc.
<i>Di lo</i> . . .	DELLO <i>spérpero</i> ,	of the havoc.
<i>A lo</i> . . .	ALLO <i>spérpero</i> ,	to the havoc.
<i>Da lo</i> . . .	DALLO <i>spérpero</i> ,	by the havoc.
<i>In lo</i> . . .	NELLO <i>spérpero</i> ,	in the havoc.
<i>Con lo</i> . . .	COLLO <i>spérpero</i> ,	with the havoc.
<i>Su lo</i> . . .	SULLO <i>spérpero</i> ,	upon the havoc.

PLURAL.

<i>Gli</i>	<i>spérperi</i> ,	the havocs.
<i>Di gli</i> . . .	DEGLI <i>spérperi</i> ,	of the havocs.
<i>A gli</i> . . .	AGLI <i>spérperi</i> ,	to the havocs.
<i>Da gli</i> . . .	DAGLI <i>spérperi</i> ,	from or by the havocs.
<i>In gli</i> . . .	NEGLI <i>spérperi</i> ,	in the havocs.
<i>Con gli</i> . . .	COGLI <i>spérperi</i> ,	with the havocs.
<i>Su gli</i> . . .	SUGLI <i>spérperi</i> ,	upon the havocs.

This article, before a vowel, is written *dell'*, *all'*, *dall'*, *dell' amico*, of the friend.

<i>Lo</i>	<i>amico</i> ,	the friend.
<i>Di lo</i> . . .	DELL' <i>amico</i> ,	of the friend.
<i>A lo</i> . . .	ALL' <i>amico</i> ,	to the friend.
<i>Da lo</i> . . .	DALL' <i>amico</i> ,	from the friend.
<i>In lo</i> . . .	NELL' <i>amico</i> ,	in the friend.
<i>Con lo</i> . . .	COLL' <i>amico</i> ,	with the friend.
<i>Su lo</i> . . .	SULL' <i>amico</i> ,	upon the friend.

Before nouns in the plural commencing with an *i*, we write *dégl'*, *coggl'*, *daggl'*, etc.; as, *Coggl' infelice*, with the unhappy.

§ III. 2d, Contraction of the article *il*, and its plural *i*:

SINGULAR.

<i>Il</i>	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	the pocket-handkerchief.
<i>Di il</i> . . . DEL	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	of the pocket-handkerchief.
<i>A il</i> . . . AL	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	to the pocket-handkerchief.
<i>Da il</i> . . . DAL	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	from or by the pocket-handk.
<i>In il</i> . . . NEL	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	in the pocket-handkerchief.
<i>Con il</i> . . . COL	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	with the pocket-handkerchief.
<i>Su il</i> . . . SUL	<i>fazzolétto</i> ,	upon the pocket-handkerchief.

PLURAL.

<i>I</i>	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	the handkerchiefs.
<i>Di i</i> . . . DEI OR DE'	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	of the handkerchiefs.
<i>A i</i> . . . AI OR A'	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	to the handkerchiefs.
<i>Da i</i> . . . DAI OR DA'	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	from the handkerchiefs.
<i>In i</i> . . . NEI OR NE'	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	in the handkerchiefs.
<i>Con i</i> . . . COI OR CO'	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	with the handkerchiefs.
<i>Su i</i> . . . SUI OR SU'	<i>fazzolétti</i> ,	upon the handkerchiefs.

§ IV. 3d, Contraction of the article *la*, and its plural *le*:

SINGULAR.

<i>La</i>	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	the pocket.
<i>Di la</i> . . . DELLA	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	of the pocket.
<i>A la</i> . . . ALLA	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	to the pocket.
<i>Da la</i> . . . DALLA	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	from the pocket.
<i>In la</i> . . . NELLA	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	in the pocket.
<i>Con la</i> . . . COLLA	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	with the pocket.
<i>Su la</i> . . . SULLA	<i>saccóccia</i> ,	upon the pocket.

Before a vowel, write *dell'*, *all'*, *dall'*, *nell'*, etc.

PLURAL.

<i>Le</i>	<i>saccócce</i> ,	the pockets.
<i>Di le</i> . . . DELLE	<i>saccócce</i> ,	of the pockets.
<i>A le</i> . . . ALLE	<i>saccócce</i> ,	to the pockets.
<i>Da le</i> . . . DALLE	<i>saccócce</i> ,	from or by the pockets.
<i>In le</i> . . . NELLE	<i>saccócce</i> ,	in the pockets.
<i>Con le</i> . . . COLLE	<i>saccócce</i> ,	with the pockets.
<i>Su le</i> . . . SULLE	<i>saccócce</i> ,	upon the pockets.

Before nouns commencing with *e*, write *dell'*, *all'*, *dall'*, etc.

§ V. The contraction of *con* and of *su* with the articles *lo*, *gli*, *la*, and *le*, is used at discretion. We can say, *Con lo stúdio*, *con la pénna*, or *cóllo stúdio*, *cóllo pénna*,—with the study, with the pen,—according to the harmony of the phrase. Instead of *su*, we can say *sopra* with all the articles, writing them separately; as, *Sul tétto*, or *sopra il tétto*; *sulla távola*, or *sopra la távola*,—upon the roof, upon the table.

§ VI. The preposition *per* may be united with the articles *il* and *i*, thus: *pel*, plural *pei*, or *pe'*. In speaking, we say, ordinarily, *per il*, to avoid affectation.

The pupil is required to supply the prepositions and articles in the following declensions:—

<i>Il giardíno</i> , the garden.	<i>I giardíni</i> , the gardens.
" of the garden.	" of the gardens.
" to the garden.	" to the gardens.
" from the garden.	" from the gardens.
<i>Lo spírito</i> , the spirit.	<i>Gli spíriti</i> , the spirits.
" of the spirit.	" of the spirits.
" to the spirit.	" to the spirits.
" from the spirit.	" from the spirits.
<i>L' álbero</i> , the tree.	<i>Gli álberi</i> , the trees.
" of the tree.	" of the trees.
" to the tree.	" to the trees.
" from the tree.	" from the trees.
<i>La rósa</i> , the rose.	<i>Le róse</i> , the roses.
" of the rose.	" of the roses.
" to the rose.	" to the roses.
" from the rose.	" from the roses.
<i>L' ánima</i> , the soul.	<i>Le ánime</i> , the souls.
" of the soul.	" of the souls.
" to the soul.	" to the souls.
" from the soul.	" from the souls.

READING LESSON.

Andiámo nêlle stráde délla città. La dónna è partíta. Non
 Let us go streets city. woman is departed. Not²
 andáte cólla cameriera. Préndo la chiáve délla cámera. La
 go¹ chambermaid. I take key room.
 primavéra délla víta. Élla morì nel fiór d'egli ánni. Non dormíte
 spring-time life. She died flower years. Not² sleep¹
 all' ária apérta. Il gátto è nêlla cámera del padrón. Il
 air open. cat master.
 lápis non è súlla távola. Léggio con le ragázze. Il calamáio
 pencil not is table. I read girls. inkstand
 è súlla távola. La chiáve è nell' úscio. Si va álla cácia nell'
 door. One goes chase
 autúnno. La penna è nel calamáio súlla távola. La víta è
 autumn.
 brève, e l'árte è lúnga. La moderazióne génera la felicità. L'óro
 short long. generates happiness. gold
 govérna il mondo. La verità prodúce l'ódio. L'úomo propóne,
 governs world. truth produces hatred. man proposes
 e Dío dispóne. La vóce, gli ócchi, il córpo, l' ánima dell' úomo.
 God disposes. voice eyes body soul
 La vóce del pópolo è la vóce di Dío.
 people

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

Italy is the garden of Europe. The passions are the
 Itália giardíno Európa. passióni sóno
 elements of life. The voice of the people is the voice of God.
 eleménti víta. vóce pópolo Dío.
 The whip (is) for the horse, the halter for the ass, and the stick
 frústa (f.) cavállo cavézza ásino bastóne
 for the shoulders of the insolent (one). (The) pride is the
 spálle impertínente. supérbia
 daughter of (the) ignorance. An ancient philosopher said, that
 fíglia ignoránza. Un antíco² filósofo¹ dísse, che
 (the) pride breakfasts with (the) abundance, dines with (the)
 orgóglio fa colazione abbondánza, pránza
 poverty, and sups with (the) shame.
 povertà céna vergógna.

Io sòno, *I am.*
Tu sèi, *thou art.*
Egli è, *he is.*

**Noi siàmo,* *we are.*
Voi siète, *you are.*
Eglino sòno, *they are.*

CONVERSATION.

<i>Che còsa avète?</i>	<i>Ho il fazzolétto.</i>
<i>Dov' è?</i>	<i>Nèlla mia saccoccia.</i>
<i>Són' io pòvero (poor)?</i>	<i>Tu non sèi pòvero, sèi ricco.</i>
<i>Còsa è l'Itàlia?</i>	<i>L'Itàlia è il giardìno dell' Európa.</i>
<i>Hài tu la pènna del vicìno?</i>	<i>No, Signóre, mio fratéllo l' ha.</i>
<i>Qual libò (book) hai?</i>	<i>Ho il libò del sárto.</i>
<i>Ha sùo pàdre un cavállo?</i>	<i>Non ha un cavállo, hà un àsino.</i>
<i>Che còsa ho io?</i>	<i>Tu hai il bastòne di mio fratéllo.</i>
<i>Sèi tu filòsofo?</i>	<i>Non sòno filòsofo.</i>
<i>Hài tu il mio temperìno?</i>	<i>No, è sòpra la tàvola.</i>
<i>Siète il mio amìco?</i>	<i>Sèno il vòstro (your) amìco.</i>
<i>Non hai un (a) giardìno?</i>	<i>Sì, ho un giardìno ed (and) un cavállo.</i>

CHAPTER IV.

THE NOUN*—IL NOME.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

Il timóre di Dio The fear of God.
La cúpola di SAN PIÉTRO . . The cupola of St. Peter.
Il duómo di FIRÉNZE . . . The cathedral of Florence.
I fióri della PRIMAVÉRA . . . The flowers of spring.
Il colóre della RÓSA The color of the rose.
Il camminétto della CÁMERA . The small mantelpiece of the chamber.

* There are some words in the Italian language which paint so well the character of the nation, that it is impossible to reproduce them in any other language by words strictly analogous. For example, the words *sfogo*, *smìnia*, *puntiglio*, *furia*, *orgàsmo*, *éstro*, *stuf-fare*, etc., representing ideas which are conceived only under a burning sky, cannot be exactly rendered in the calm and misty Northern languages. Being purely euphonic, the rules on the article may be utterly disregarded whenever euphony requires it. The same may also be said respecting the elision and contraction of words.

<i>La CÁRTA è nel CASSETTÍNO</i>	.	The paper is in the drawer.
<i>Il PÓZZO è nel CORTÍLE</i>	.	The well is in the yard.
<i>Lo STÚDIO è un GODIMÉNTO</i>	.	Study is a pleasure.
<i>Gli ÁNNI fuggono rápidi</i>	.	Years fly rapidly.
<i>La MINÉSTRA è frédda</i>	.	The soup is cold.
<i>L'ÓZIO è il PÁDRE di ógni vízio,</i>		Idleness is the father of all vices.

THE GENDER OF NOUNS.

There are only two genders in the Italian language, — the masculine and the feminine.

I. All nouns belong either to the masculine or feminine gender.

II. Nouns ending in *a* are feminine. Those expressing dignity, and professions of men, such as *il pápa*, the pope, and the following, derived from the Greek, are masculine : —

<i>Anagrámma,</i>	anagram.	<i>Idióma,</i>	idiom.
<i>Anatéma,</i>	anathema.	<i>Pianéta,</i>	planet.
<i>Assióma,</i>	axiom.	<i>Poéma,</i>	poem.
<i>Clíma,</i>	climate.	<i>Prisma,</i>	prism.
<i>Diadéma,</i>	diadem.	<i>Probléma,</i>	problem.
<i>Dilémma,</i>	dilemma.	<i>Programma,</i>	programme.
<i>Diplóma,</i>	diploma.	<i>Scísma,</i>	schism.
<i>Dógma,</i>	dogma.	<i>Sistéma,</i>	system.
<i>Drámma,</i>	drachm.	<i>Sofísma,</i>	sophism.
<i>Embléma,</i>	emblem.	<i>Stémma,</i>	coat of arms.
<i>Enigma,</i>	enigma.	<i>Stratagémma,</i>	stratagem.
<i>Epigrámma,</i>	epigram.	<i>Téma,</i>	theme.
<i>Fantásma,</i>	spectre.	<i>Teoréma,</i>	theorem.

III. Of the nouns ending in *e*, some are masculine, and others feminine. As no positive rules can be given to indicate their gender, recourse must be had to the dictionary.

IV. Among the nouns ending in *e*, some are of both genders ;* as, —

* Some masculine nouns ending in *e* take a different termination for the feminine ; as, *re, regina*.

IL or LA *cárcere*, the prison.
~~Il~~ LA *cénere*,* the cinders.
 IL or LA *fine*, the end.
 IL or LA *fólgore*, the thunder.
 IL or LA *fonte*, the fountain.
~~Il~~ LA *frónte*,† the forehead.

IL or LA *grégge*, the flock.
 IL or LA *fúne*, the cord.
 IL or LA *lépre*, the hare.
 IL or LA *márgine*, the margin.
 IL or LA *sérpe*, the serpent.
 IL or LA *tigre*, the tiger.

V. There are some nouns ending in *a* which can end in *e*, without changing the gender; as, *L' árma* or *l' árme*, arms (heraldic); *la sórta*, or *la sórte*, destiny.

VI. Very few nouns terminate in *i*, as this letter is generally the characteristic sign of the plural. Of these few, some are masculine, and some are feminine; as, —

MASCULINE.

Il cavadénti, the dentist.
Il lavacéci, the dunce.
Il Tamígi, the Thames.

FEMININE.

La metrópoli, the metropolis.
La sintássi, the syntax.
La tési, the thesis.

REMARK. — The noun *dì*, day, and its compounds; as, *Buondì*, good-day; *mezzodì*, noon; *oggi-dì*, now-a-days; *Lunedì*, Monday; *Martedì*, Tuesday, etc., — are all masculine. So are likewise nouns of dignity; as, *Bulì*, bailiff; *pári*, peer; *guardasigilli*, keeper of the seals.

VII. Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender, except *la máno*, hand; *lu éco*, the echo. The poetic words *immágo*, *Cartágo*, abridged from *immáGINE*, *CartáGINE*, image and Carthage, are feminine.

REMARK. — Several nouns of animate beings, ending in *o*, change *o* into *a* for the feminine; as, *Il ranóccchio*, m., *la ranóccchia*, f., frog; *il gátto*, m., *la gátta*, f., cat; *curállo*, horse; *cavállo*, mare; *colúmbo*, *colúmbo*, dove, etc.

VIII. The following nouns ending in *o* become feminine by changing the *o* into *a*: ‡ —

* *Il cénere* is used only in poetry.

† *La frónte* is more used than *il frónte*.

‡ *Fanciúlo*, or *rag izzo*, is said of a child who has not yet reached the age of adolescence. *Fanciúlla* and *rag izza*, on the contrary, are used for a person of marriageable age; the first particularly being employed to indicate unmarried women in general.

ONS. — *L'apis*, pencil; *ribes*, currants; *chérmes*, cochineal, and a few foreign nouns, end with a consonant.

<i>Il casato</i> ,	the family name.	<i>Il nùvolo</i> ,	the cloud.
<i>Il canestro</i> ,	the basket.	<i>L' ombréllò</i> ,	the umbrella.
<i>Il cioccolàto</i> ,	the chocolate.	<i>L' orécchio</i> ,	the ear.
<i>Il frùtto</i> ,*	the fruit.	<i>Il ranócchio</i> ,	the frog.
<i>Il légno</i> ,*	the wood.	<i>Lo scrìtto</i> ,*	the writing.
<i>Il mattìno</i> ,	the morning.	<i>Il soffitto</i> ,	the ceiling.

Feminine: *La casàta, la canéstra, la frùtta, la légna*, etc.

IX. The names of fruit-trees, ending in *o*, become feminine by changing *o* into *a*; and then they serve to express the fruit. Ex.:—

Il péscò, the peach-tree; *La péscà*, the peach.
Il mélo, the apple-tree; *La méla*, the apple.

The words *fico*, *pómo*, *aràncio*, fig-tree and fig, apple-tree and apple, orange-tree and orange, are an exception.

X. Very few nouns end in *u*. These are always marked with a grave accent, and are of the feminine gender; as, *La gioventù*, the youth; *la grù*, the crane, — except *Perù*, m., Peru.

GENERAL REMARKS.

All words ending in *ore*, of which there are a great number, are masculine without any exception. Those ending in *zione* or *sione* are feminine without any exception.

Nouns ending in *ge*, *le*, *me*, *re*, *se*, are generally masculine; as, —

<i>Rége</i> ,	king.	<i>Cuóre</i> ,	heart.
<i>Viàle</i> ,	path.	<i>Arnése</i> ,	utensil.
<i>Fiùme</i> ,	river.		

* Of the words *frùtto*, *l'igno*, and *scrìtto*, which are masculine, and become feminine by changing the *o* into *a*, it must be observed that *il frùtto* is the fruit in general, properly and figuratively; while *la frùtta* or *le frùtta* means the dessert. *L'igno* means the woods, and *la l'igna* is the wood to burn. *Scrìtto* is a writing; and *la scrìtta*, a contract.

Some names of animate beings denote the feminine by a different word; as, *Uòma*, man; *dónna*, woman; *tóro*, bull; *vácca*, cow.

Nouns ending in *be, ce, pe, te, re, ie, ine, one, nte*, are generally feminine; as, —

<i>Plèbe,</i>	people.
<i>Sièpe,</i>	hedge.
<i>Chiàve,</i>	key.
<i>Fònte,</i>	spring.
<i>Immàgine,</i>	image.
<i>Ragione,</i>	reason.
<i>Pàce,</i>	peace.

<i>Arte,</i>	art.
<i>Mènte,</i>	mind.
<i>Série,</i>	series.
<i>Incudina,</i>	anvil.
<i>Cicatrice,</i>	scar.
<i>Legione,</i>	lesson.
<i>Cróce,</i>	cross.

The words *Abbici*, alphabet; *Apocalissi*, Apocalypse; with a few others, are of the masculine gender.

Some words of Greek extraction, ending in *i*, are of the feminine gender; as, —

<i>Analisi,</i>	analysis.
<i>Gènesi,</i>	Genesis.
<i>Crisi,</i>	crisis.

<i>Ènfasi,</i>	emphasis.
<i>Tési,</i>	thesis.
<i>Sintássi,</i>	syntax.

READING LESSON.

Il rispétto per le dónne è l' indizio più sicúro dell' inciviliménto
 respect women indication most sure civilization
 di un pópolo. La schiavitù è la vergógna dégli uómini. L' età
 slavery shame men. age
 e il sònno inségnano all' uómo la stráda délla móрте. Bisógna
 sleep teach death. It is necessary
 vedér l' Itàlia nèlla primavéra e nèlla státe per potér mégljo
 to see summer to be able better
 giudicàre délla serenità del sùo ciélo e délla cálma dél màre che
 to judge sky sea
 la circónda. L' arte di regnáre è la mássima di tútte le arti.
 it^s surrounds.¹ art to reign greatest all
 La memória dei benefizi è il débito délla gratitúdine. Noi
 memory benefits debt W.
 vediámo il lámpo práma di sentíre lo scóppio del fúlmine. Il
 see lightning before to hear burst thunder.
 filósofo cerca la súa felicità nèllo stúdio délla natúra.
 seeks

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

(The) Study is useful to the health of the body. (The)
 stúdio vantaggióso salúte córpo.
 Hatred is the want of vengeance. The loss of liberty is the
 ódio bisógno. vendétta. pérdere libertà
 greatest of misfortunes. The philosopher seeks his happiness
 prima disgrázie. filósofo cerca felicità
 in the study of (the) nature. (The) Innocence of life
 natúra. innocénza víta
 takes away the fear of death. (The) Tears are the tacit
 tóglie spavénto lágrime tácito²
 language of grief.
 linguággio¹ dolóre.

Dátemi dell' óro e dell' argénto. L' ária délla mattína è un
 Give me gold silver. air morning
 balsámo nélia primavéra. Non è arriváto óggi il pádre del
 balm spring. Not arrived to-day
 Signór Dúca?

Nói abbíamo, we have.
 Voi avéte, you have.
 Églino hánno, m., they have.
 Élleno hánno, f., they have.

Abbíamo nói? have we?
 Avéte vói? have you?
 Hánno églino? have they?
 Hánno élleno? have they?

CONVERSATION.

Che avéte nel canéstro?
 Qual' è il nóme délla lavandáia?
 Avéte vedúto (seen) il cavállo?
 Dove?
 Abbíamo nói sigílli?
 Dove sòno gli uómini inérti?
 Avéte vedúto la cárta?
 Chi è quést' (this) Italiáno?
 Chi è nel giardíno?
 Chi è quèsta ragázza?
 Avéte vedúta la mia casa?
 La casa nélia stráda del Re?
 Avéte frútta nel vóstro giardíno?

Ho dell' uóva nel mio canéstro.
 Il súo nóme è Catarína.
 Io l' (it) ho vedúto.
 Nélia stráda.
 Voi non avéte sigílli, avéte cárta.
 Dove il suólo è mólto fértile.
 Sì, è nel cassettíno.
 È il camerière del médico.
 Il cavadénti.
 È mia sorélla.
 Quále casa?
 No, Signóra, non l' ho vedúta.
 No, ma (but) abbíamo un péscó
 ed un mélo che ne daránno
 l' áнно ventúro.

CHAPTER V.

THE PLURAL OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives agree in gender and number with the nouns they qualify.

After having learned the rules upon the formation of the plural, the scholar will do well to change all the plural nouns of the following exercise into the singular.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>I ciechi hanno buone orecchie,</i>	The blind have good ears.
<i>Le lenzuole sono pulite,</i>	The sheets are clean.
<i>Le belle antichità di Roma,</i>	The beautiful antiquities of Rome.
<i>Le botteghe sono sotto ai portici,</i>	The shops are under the porticos.
<i>L'aratro fa i solchi profondi,</i>	The plough makes deep furrows.
<i>Ecco due paia di stivali,</i>	Here are two pairs of boots.
<i>I funghi nascono nei boschi,</i>	Fungi grow in the woods.
<i>Mi dolgono le calcagna,*</i>	My heels pain me.
<i>Benefici sono i raggi del sole,</i>	The rays of the sun are beneficent.
<i>Mi piace il giuoco degli scacchi,</i>	I like the play of chess.
<i>Le piogge ristorano la terra,</i>	The rains refresh the earth.
<i>Altri tempi, altri costumi,</i>	Other times, other manners.
<i>I malvagi non sono felici,</i>	The wicked are not happy.

GENERAL RULES.

I. The greater proportion of nouns and adjectives in Italian, whatever be their gender, form their plural by changing the last letter into *i*; as,—

MASC. SINGULAR.		MASC. PLURAL.
<i>Il poeta celebre,</i>	the celebrated poet.	<i>I poeti celebri.</i>
<i>Il letto morbido,</i>	the soft bed.	<i>I letti morbidi.</i>
<i>Il mare burrascoso,</i>	the stormy sea.	<i>I mari burrascosi.</i>
FEM.		FEM.
<i>La passione infelice,</i>	the unhappy passion.	<i>Le passioni infelici.</i>
<i>La mano débole,</i>	the feeble hand.	<i>Le mani déboli.</i>

* The letter *i* indicates an idiomatic phrase.

The following are exceptions : —

II. Feminine nouns and adjectives ending in the singular in *a*, make their plural in *e* ; as, —

<i>La scárpa strétta,</i>	the narrow shoe.	<i>Le scárpe strétte.</i>
<i>La bélla dóнна,</i>	the handsome woman.	<i>Le béлле dóнне.</i>

III. The nouns ending in *i*, in *ie*, in an accented vowel, and the monosyllables, do not change their termination in the plural ; as, *La crísi*, the crisis ; *le crísi*, the crises : *la città*, the city ; *le città*, the cities : *il re*, the king ; *i re*, the kings ; etc.

IV. Nouns are also invariable when they immediately follow the ordinal numbers twenty-one, thirty-one, etc. ; as, *Ventúno scúdo*, twenty-one crowns ; *trentúno dolláro*, thirty-one dollars. But the noun takes the plural when placed before the number ; as, *Scúdi ventúno*, *dollári trentúno*.

V. The words *addío*, adieu ; *lóro*, their, are invariable ; as, *Gli addío*, *i lóro amici*.

EUPHONIC RULES.

VI. All the nouns, masculine or feminine, ending in *ca* or *ga*, insert an *h* in the plural to preserve the hard sound of the *c* or *g* ; as, —

<i>Il monárca,</i>	the monarch ;	<i>i monárchi,</i>	the monarchs.
<i>La mánica,</i>	the sleeve ;	<i>le mániche,</i>	the sleeves.
<i>La stréga,</i>	the sorcerer ;	<i>le stréghe,</i>	the sorcerers.

VII. Nouns of two syllables, ending in *co* or *go*, take an *h* in the plural ; as, —

<i>Il bósco,</i>	the wood ;	<i>i bóschi,</i>	the woods.
<i>Il lágò,</i>	the lake ;	<i>i lágghi,</i>	the lakes.

Except *pórco*, *gréco*, *mágo*, — pig, Greek, magician, — which make, in the plural, *pórci*, *gréci*, *mági*.

VIII. Nouns of more than two syllables, ending in *co* or *go*, also take an *h*, when these terminations are preceded by one or more consonants; as, —

<i>L' albérgo,</i>	the hotel.	<i>Gli albérghi.</i>
<i>Il rinfrésco,</i>	the refreshment.	<i>I rinfréschi.</i>

IX. Nouns ending in *co* or *go*, preceded by a vowel,* form their plural in *ci* or *gi*; as, —

<i>Il médico,</i>	the physician;	<i>i medici,</i>	the physicians.
<i>Lo spárago,</i>	the asparagus;	<i>gli spáragi,</i>	the asparagus.

X. EXCEPTION. — Several nouns take an *h* in the plural, though preceded by a vowel; as, *Andlogo*, analogous; *antíco*, ancient; *decálogo*, decalogue; *demagógo*, demagogue; etc.

XI. Nouns ending in *io* lose the final *o* in all cases where this termination is preceded by a vowel, or by two or three consonants forming a syllable with *io*; as, —

<i>Fornáio,</i>	baker;	<i>fornái,</i>	bakers.
<i>Cuóio,</i>	leather;	<i>cuói,</i>	leathers.
<i>Fáscio,</i>	bundle;	<i>fáschi,</i>	bundles.
<i>Máschio,</i>	boy;	<i>máschi,</i>	boys.
<i>Artiglio,</i>	claw;	<i>artigli,</i>	claws.
<i>Astuccio,</i>	case;	<i>astúcci,</i>	cases.
<i>Viaggio,</i>	voyage;	<i>viaggi,</i>	voyages.

XII. The following nouns, although comprehended in the above class, form an exception, by changing the *io* final into *j*: —

<i>Arbitrio,</i>	will.	<i>Cérchio,</i>	circle.
<i>Átrio,</i>	vestibule.	<i>Dóppio,</i>	double.
<i>Dúbio,</i>	doubt.	<i>Própio,</i>	proper.
<i>Gráffio,</i>	scratch.	<i>Sécchio,</i>	milk-pail.
<i>Impróprio,</i>	improper.	<i>Sóffio,</i>	a blow.
<i>Pátrio,</i>	of the country.	<i>Spicchio,</i>	a clove of garlic.

* *Mendico*, beggar; *equivoco*, equivocate; *diálogo*, dialogue; *apólogo*, apologue, — are written with or without the *h*; as, *Mendici* or *mend chi*, beggars.

Obs. — Some nouns in the singular in *ere* also end in *eró*: as, *Il pensiere*, the thought; *il pensiero*: *il destriere*, the steed; *il destriero*: *lo scolare*, the scholar; *lo scolaro*: *il consolo*, the consul; *il consolo*. When said of bones cleared from the table, *osso*, bone, makes *ossi*; when of a skeleton, it makes *ossa*. *Filo*, thread, makes *fila*, threads. *Fili* is used when speaking of the edge of cutting instruments.

These nouns make, in the plural, *arbútrj*, *dtrj*, *čérchj*, *dóppj*, etc.

XIII. This same termination, *io*, is changed into *j* whenever it is preceded by a single consonant, or two consonants not forming one syllable; as, —

<i>Giudicio</i> ,	judgment;	<i>giudícj</i> ,	judgments.
<i>Principio</i> ,	beginning;	<i>principj</i> ,	beginnings.
<i>Provérbio</i> ,	proverb;	<i>proverbj</i> ,	proverbs.

XIV. Except the following nouns, which make their plural by dropping the final *o*, because the *i* is used in the singular only to soften the sound of the *c* or *g*: —

<i>Ágio</i> ,	ease.	<i>Frégio</i> ,	ornament.
<i>Aráncio</i> ,	orange.	<i>Grigio</i> ,	gray.
<i>Bácio</i> ,	kiss.	<i>Indúgio</i> ,	delay.
<i>Barbógio</i> ,	dotard.	<i>Mulvágio</i> ,	wicked.
<i>Bigio</i> ,	gray.	<i>Palágio</i> ,	palace.
<i>Cácio</i> ,	cheese.	<i>Pertúgio</i> ,	hole.
<i>Cécio</i> ,	rag.	<i>Prégio</i> ,	merit.
<i>Diságio</i> ,	disquiet.	<i>Sórcio</i> ,	mouse.

Plural: *Ági*, *aránci*, *báci*, *cénci*, etc.

XV. The termination *io*, in the syllable *quio*, changes into *j*; as, —

<i>Osséquio</i> ,	respect;	<i>osséquj</i> ,	respects.
<i>Delíquio</i> ,	fainting-fit;	<i>delíquj</i> ,	fainting-fits.

XVI. If, however, the accent falls on the *i* of the syllable *io*, then *io* is changed into *ii* for the plural, and the sound is a little longer than *j*; as, —

<i>Pío</i> , <i>zío</i> , <i>natío</i> , <i>rió</i> ,	} pious, uncle, native, brook.
<i>Pii</i> , <i>zii</i> , <i>natii</i> , <i>rii</i> ,	

XVII. Proper nouns ending in *io* likewise take *ii* in the plural; * as, —

<i>Dário</i> , <i>Tibério</i> , <i>Cláudio</i> ,	} Darius, Tiberius, Claudius.
<i>I Dárii</i> , <i>I Tibérii</i> , <i>I Cláudii</i> ,	

* In Italian, as in other languages, some nouns are used only in the singular number; as proper names; and the words *prole*, offspring; *mane*, morning; *roba*, luggage; *rosalia*,

XVIII. The terminations *cia* and *gia* drop the *i* of the plural in the words in which this letter is but slightly pronounced; as, —

<i>La cósia,</i>	the thigh;	<i>le cósce,</i>	the thighs.
<i>La spiággia,</i>	the shore;	<i>le spiágge,</i>	the shores.
<i>La cáccia,</i>	the chase;	<i>le cáce,</i>	the chases.

XIX. But in the words *provincia*, *ciriégia*, *franchégia*, province, cherries, immunities, and some others, the *i* is retained in the plural, because, being distinctly pronounced in the singular, it is necessary that it should be heard in the plural; as, *Provincie*, *ciriégie*, *franchégie*, etc.

XX. We must also preserve the *i* of *cía* and of *gia* when it is accented, and the accent must be strongly marked by the voice; as, —

<i>La bugía,</i>	the lie;	<i>le bugie,</i>	the lies.
<i>La farmácia,</i>	the pharmacy;	<i>le farmacie,</i>	the pharmacies.

IRREGULAR PLURALS.

XXI. The few nouns which have irregular plurals are :

<i>Uómo,</i>	man;	<i>uómini,</i>	men.
<i>Búe,</i>	ox;	<i>búoi,</i>	oxen.
<i>Móglie,</i>	wife;	<i>móghi,</i>	wives.
<i>Mille,</i>	thousand;	<i>míla,</i>	thousands.
<i>Dio,</i>	God;	<i>déi,</i>	gods.

XXII. The possessive adjective pronouns *mío*, *túo*, *súo*, my, thy, his, make *miéi*, *tuóí*, *súoi*, in the plural; and the adjectives *tále* or *cotále*, such, and *quále*, which, are in the plural *táli* or *tái*, *cotáli* or *cotái*, *quáli* or *quái*.

XXIII. The following nouns form their plural in *a*, and become feminine : —

measles. And some are used only in the plural; as, *I calzóni*, the trousers; *le reni*, the kidneys; *i dolci*, the sweetmeats; *le forbici*, the scissors; *i viveri*, the victuals; *le ténere*, darkness. Some nouns have a different signification in the plural; as, *Il cippo*, the trunk of a tree; *i ceppi*, the fetters; *il ferro*, the iron; *i ferri*, the fetters; *la gente*, the people; *le genti*, the nations; *la grátia*, the favor; *le grátie*, the thanks.

<i>Un mighiáio,</i>	a thousand.	<i>Le mighiáia.</i>
<i>Un centináio,</i>	a hundred.	<i>Le centináia.</i>
<i>Un uóvo,</i>	an egg.	<i>Le uóva.</i>
<i>Un miglio,</i>	a mile.	<i>Le miglia.</i>
<i>Un páio,</i>	a pair.	<i>Le páia.</i>
<i>Uno stáio,</i>	a bushel.	<i>Le stáia.</i>
<i>Un móggio,</i>	a bushel.	<i>Le móggia.</i>

XXIV. The following masculine nouns have a masculine plural in *i*, and a feminine plural in *a*. The last is more frequently used.

<i>L' anéllo,</i>	the ring.	<i>Il fondaménto,</i>	the base.
<i>Il bráccio,</i>	the arm.	<i>Il frútto,</i>	the fruit.
<i>Il budéllo,</i>	the intestine.	<i>Il fúso,</i>	the spindle.
<i>Il calcáagno,</i>	the heel.	<i>Il géstó,</i>	the gesture.
<i>Il castéllo,</i>	the castle.	<i>Il ginóccchio,</i>	the knee.
<i>Il cíglio,</i>	the eyebrow.	<i>Il gómíto,</i>	the elbow.
<i>Il coltéllo,</i>	the knife.	<i>Il grído,</i>	the cry.
<i>Il córno,</i>	the horn.	<i>Il lábbro,</i>	the lip.
<i>Il dító,</i>	the finger.	<i>Il légo,</i>	the wood.
<i>Il fílo,</i>	the thread.	<i>Il lenzuólo,</i>	the sheet.
<i>Il mémbro,</i>	the member.	<i>Il riso,</i>	the laugh.
<i>Il múro,</i>	the wall.	<i>Il sácco,</i>	the sack.
<i>L' ósso,</i>	the bone.	<i>Lo strído,</i>	the cry.
<i>Il pómo,</i>	the apple.	<i>Il vestígio,</i>	the vestige.
<i>Il quadréllo,</i>	the dart.	<i>Il vestiménto,</i>	the garment.

REMARK. — *Córna*, in the plural, signifies horns; *córni*, instruments: *géstá*, exploits; *géstí*, gestures: *gómíta*, elbows; *gómítí*, cubits: *mémbrá*, members of the body; *mémbrí*, members of an assembly: *múra*, ramparts; *múrí*, walls.

READING LESSON.

Préso i Románi, i soldáti érano agricultóri, e le casáte
 Among houses²
 illústri conservávano sémpré i cognómi déi frútti e déi legúmi
 illustrious¹ preserved always surnames roots
 che venívano, a preferénza, coltiváti dái lóro antenáti; táli
 came (were) ancestors

fúrono i Léntuli, i Fábii, i Pisóni. I regáli plácano non sólo gli
 presents appease only
 uómini ma pur áncò gli déi. I pittóri. antichi non usávano nelle
 even painters² ancient¹ used
 lóro pittúre che quáttro colóri. Le dónne sóno fátte per éssere
 pictures four colors. women made to be
 le compágne e non le schiáve dégli uómini. Un párroco disse
 companions slaves curate said
 álla prédica, la Doménica délle pálme: Io vi avvérto, fratélli, che
 sermon Palm: I you² inform¹
 per isfuggíre la calca, confesserò Lunedì i bugiárdi, Martedì
 to avoid confusion, I shall confess liars
 glí avári, Mercoledì i mormoratóri, Giovedì i ládri, Venerdì
 avaricious slanderers thieves
 i díscoli, e Sábato gli ubbriáchi. Non si sa s'egli ebbe mólti
 libertines drunkards. We do not know had
 peniténti. I fanciúlli ed i pázzi si figúrano che vénti fránchi e
 fools imagine francs
 vénti ánni ábbiano a durár sémpré. Ho vedúto le óssa di tre
 years have last always
 giòvani elefánti.

EXERCISE

ON THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF NOUNS.

[The singular only is given.]

The face comprehends the forehead, the eyebrows, the eyelids,
 vólto comprénde palpebre
 the nose, the lips, the mouth, the cheeks, the chin, and the ears.
 ménto
 (The) children ought to obey their parents, scholars their
 fanciullo débbono ubbidíre genitóre
 teachers, and citizens (to) the laws. When we read certain
 maéstro cittadíno légge. Quándo si léggono certi
 historians, we may say that the human species is composed
 stórico, si dirébbe umána spécie (consists of) consíste
 of only two or three hundreds of individuals decorated with
 sóltánto di dúe o tre indivídúo decorátó
 the title of emperors, kings, popes, generals, and ministers. Men
 títoló ímperátóra mínístro.

are generally idle in countries where the soil is very fertile.
 sòno per lo più inerte paése dóve suólo móltó fértilé.

(The) stars, (the) animals, and even plants were (enumerated)
 ástro animále ánche fùrono annoveráte

among the Egyptian divinities. The walls of Thebes were
 fra le egiziáne Tèbe

raised by the simple sound of the harp; the walls of the city
 fabbricáte sèmplice suóno cètra

of Jericho fell down, on the contrary, at the sound of (the)
 Jérico càddero, in véce

trumpet. The large sacks are filled with grain. My sisters
 córno. empiúto gráno.

have some silver spoons.
 alcúno argénto

Nói siámo, we are.
Vói siéte, you are.
Eglino sóno, they are.

CONVERSATION.

Chi è quèsta dónna?

Avéte vedúto il re?

È égli Francése?

Sóno i poéti felici (happy)?

Che hánno i ciéchi?

Dóve náscono i fùngghi?

Quánti anélli avéte?

Mangiáte frútti?

*Quánti (how many) giòrni fá
 una settimána?*

*Cóme si chiámono? (How are
 they called?)*

Ed i mési quánti sóno?

Cóme si chiámono?

E le stagióni (seasons)?

È la mádre del poéta celèbre.

Abbiámo vedúto il re.

No, è Tedésco (German).

Generalménte non sóno felici.

I ciéchi hánno buóne orécchie.

I fùngghi náscono néi bóschi.

Ne ho dúe.

Sì, quándo sóno múri.

Sétte.

*Doménica, Lunedì, Martedì,
 Mercoledì, Giovedì, Venerdì,
 Sábato.*

Dódicì.

*Gennájó, Febbrájó, Márzo,
 Apríle, Mággio, Giúgno,
 Lúglio, Agósto, Settémbré,
 Ottóbre, Novémbré, Decém-
 bré.*

*Sóno quáttro: Primavéra, Es-
 tâte o (or) Státe, Autúнно,
 Invérno o Vérno.*

CHAPTER VI.

THE CASES OF NOUNS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE UPON THE USE OF *DI*, *A*, *DA*.

<i>Vi piace la città DI Parigi?</i>	Does the city of Paris please you?
<i>Il fitto DELLE case è caro,</i>	The rent of the houses is dear.
<i>Vi dico che non ho danári,</i>	I tell you that I have no money.
<i>Spoléo non è lontána DA Róma,</i>	Spoletto is not far from Rome.
<i>Voglio scrivere DELLE lettere,</i>	I wish to write some letters.
<i>Io non voglio brighe,</i>	I do not wish cares.
<i>Voi non avete fratélli,</i>	You have no brothers.
<i>L' uómo vive DELLE sue fatiche,</i>	Man lives by (of) his labors.
<i>Io non témo púnto di voi,</i>	I do not fear you at all.
<i>Ecco un dizionáριο DA táscá,</i>	Here is a pocket dictionary.
<i>L'Ariósto è il pittóre DELLA natura,</i>	Ariosto is the painter of nature.
<i>L' ócchio del padróne ingrássá il cavállo,</i>	The eye of the master fattens the horse.
<i>Mi è soréllu dal láto DEL pádre, e non DAL cánto DELLA madre,</i>	She is a sister on my father's side, but not on the side of my mother.
<i>Égli ha pósto DELLA pólvère DA schiópโป in úna scátola DA tabácco,</i>	He has put (some) gunpowder in a tobacco-box.

The several relations of the Italian nouns are expressed by the prepositions *di*, of; *a*, to; *da*, from, or by. The nominative and objective are distinguished by the place they occupy in the sentence.

1. The nominative denotes the relation of a subject to a finite verb; as, *María ama*, Mary loves.

2. The genitive denotes origin, possession, and other relations, which in English are expressed by the preposition *of*, or by the possessive case; as, *I libri di mio fratéllu*, my brother's books.

3. The dative denotes that *to* or *for* which any thing is, or is done; as, *Égli mi dáva il libro*, he gave me the book.

4. The accusative is either the object of an active verb or of certain prepositions, or the subject of an infinitive.

5. The vocative is the form applied to the name of any object addressed.

6. The ablative denotes privation and other relations, expressed in English by the prepositions *with*, *from*, *in*, or *by*.

Proper nouns are varied with the prepositions only; common nouns, with the preposition and article.

Variation of the proper noun *Boston*:—

Nominative	<i>Boston</i> ,	Boston.
Relation of Possession . .	<i>Di Boston</i> ,	of Boston.
" " Attribution . .	<i>A Boston</i> ,	to Boston.
" " Derivation . .	<i>Da Boston</i> ,	from (or by) Boston.
Accusative	<i>Boston</i> ,	Boston.

Variation of a common noun in the plural:—

Nominative	<i>I libri</i> ,	the books.
Relation of Possession . .	<i>Dei libri</i> ,	of the books.
" " Attribution . .	<i>Ai libri</i> ,	to the books.
" " Derivation . .	<i>Dai libri</i> ,	from (or by) the books.
Accusative	<i>I libri</i> ,	the books.

I. *Di*, the sign of the genitive, is used, —

1st, When it denotes possession; as, *La casa di mio padre*, my father's house; *una bótte di vino*, a cask of wine.

2d, In the relation of qualification; as, *Cucchidío d'argénto*, a silver spoon; *è témpo di pranzáre*, it is time to dine.

REMARK.—The partitive article in Italian is nothing else than the genitive case of the definite article, which has, in this instance, the signification of the objective; as, *Dátemi del páne*, give me some bread.

II. There are, in Italian, many elliptical phrases in which *di*, of, is understood; as, —

<i>Temere DEL pópolo</i> , for <i>temere lo sdégno DEL pópolo</i> ,	To fear the anger, or the complaints, of the people.
<i>Fidársi DI úno</i> , for <i>fidársi nell' onestà DI úno</i> ,	To confide in some one, or, in the honesty of some one.
<i>Sapér DI música, DI álgebra</i> , etc., for <i>sapére un póco DI música, un póco DI álgebra</i> , etc.,	To know music, algebra, etc.; or, to know a little music, a little algebra, etc.

III. *Of* translated by the article *il* or *lo*.

The article *il* or *lo* takes the place of the preposition when it comes before an infinitive used as a noun, either as the subject of the verb, or the regimen of the verb which precedes it; as, —

<i>È fáçile lo studiáre, il parláre,</i>	It is easy to study, to speak.
<i>Gráve delítto è il tradíre la pátria,</i>	It is a great crime to betray one's country.

IV. We can use *di* in these phrases, particularly in conversation, and say, *è fáçile di studiáre, di parláre*, etc., — some word preceding *di* being understood; as, *è fáçile l' azíone di studiáre*, etc., *gráve delítto è quéllo di tradíre*, etc.

V. *Da* indicates distance, separation, origin, difference, or dependence; as, —

<i>L' astúzia náçe dálla debilézza,</i>	Cunning results from weakness.
<i>Da un giòrno all' áltro,</i>	From one day to another.
<i>Dall' áнно scórso,</i>	Since last year.
<i>Io non dipéndo da nessúno,</i>	I depend on no one.
<i>Distínguere il véro dal fálsò,</i>	To distinguish the true from the false.

VI. The verb *uscíre*, to go out; and the word *fuóri*, out, — although expressing an idea of distance, — should be followed in Italian by *di* instead of *da*, for the sake of euphony; as, —

Uscire di sénno,
Fuori di sè, fuóri di càsa,

To go out of one's senses.
 Out of one's self, out of the house.

VII. We say likewise, with *di* in the place of *da*, *Cadér di máno, di bócca*, to fall from the hand, from the mouth; *levársi di távola*, to rise from the table; *cavársi d'impiccio*, to draw one's self from embarrassment; *venire di un luógo*, to come from a place. But, when it is necessary to accompany the preposition by the article, *da* is more commonly used; as, *Cadére dalle máni*, to fall from the hands; *venire dal teátro*, to come from the theatre, etc. These rules are purely euphonic.

VIII. *Da* is used before a noun which indicates use, employment, or the destination of a thing; as, —

<i>Cáne da caccia,</i>	hunting-dog.
<i>Cavállo da sèlla,</i>	saddle-horse.

IX. *Of the*, when it signifies *some*, is rendered in Italian by *certi, diversi, alcuni, varii*, for the masculine; and *certe, diverse, alcune, varie*, for the feminine. It is then a partitive adjective;* as, —

<i>Ho pranzáto con alcuni amici,</i>	I have dined with some friends.
<i>Scrivo a varie parénti,</i>	I write to some relations.
<i>Dátemi del páne,</i>	Give me some bread.

In the last phrase, "some" is expressed by *del* (of the). When there is only a simple general designation of the object, without an idea of quantity, the Italians never use the partitive article. Thus they say, —

<i>Beréte víno o birra?</i>	Do you drink wine or beer?
<i>Pán sólo mi básta pèr far colazione.</i>	Bread alone suffices me for breakfast.

* The partitive may be expressed by the indefinite article *a* or *an* (*un, uno, una*). If words are used in a general sense, no article precedes the noun; as, *Egli vende birra e vino*, he sells beer and wine; *io vedo le ragazze*, I see the girls; *io vedo delle ragazze*, I see some girls; *io vedo ragazze, ma non vedo ragazzi*, I see girls, but not boys.

X. They say in Italian, *Chi ha danári ha amíci*, he who has money has friends,—without the article if the sentence be simply enunciated, and with the article if quantity is understood; in which case we must suppose the word “portion” before the article.

XI. *A* (to or at), dative.—The preposition *to* is translated *a* before a consonant, and *ad* before a vowel; as,—

<i>Andiámo a Nápoli,</i>	Let us go to Naples.
<i>Scrivéte ad un amico,</i>	Write to a friend.
<i>Mandáte álla pósta,</i>	Send to the post.
<i>Mandáte a comprár dell' inchi- óstro,</i>	Send to buy some ink.

XII. *To* translated by *di*.—The preposition *to*, when governed by the verb *to be*, or when denoting possession, is translated by *di*; as,—

<i>Di chi è quésto cappéllo?</i>	To whom is this hat?
<i>È del servitóre,</i>	It is the servant's.

A (to) translated by *da*.—We have seen that *of* is translated by *da* before a noun which indicates use, employment, or destination: the same may be said of *a* (to) when similarly placed; as,—

<i>Cárta da lèttère,</i>	letter-paper.
<i>Bótte da víno,</i>	wine-tun.

READING LESSON.

Mólte commedióle, compóste dall' Ariósto che le recitáva in
 Many little comedies, composed them recited
 compagnía de' suói fratélli é delle súe sorélle, fúrono il prelúdio
 brothers his sisters, were prelude
 delle immortalí súe opére. Finalménte l' elegánte orazióne, che
 his works.
 pronunciò intórno álle régle che si déggiono seguíre, ed
 he pronounced concerning rules one ought to follow
 intórno állo scópo che ognún propórre si débbe nei própri stúdi,
 scope every one proposes ought own
 féce conoscére álla città di Ferrára, súa patriá, ch' éssa alleváva
 made to know country reared

un génio, il quále avrébbela illustráta; ed il pádre súo godéva
 genius who would have (her) enjoyed
 in segreto délla consolazióne d' udíre da' suói concitadini
 hearing fellow-citizens
 propórre il próprio figliúolo ái lóro, cóme un modélllo da imitársi.
 to propose own son as model imitate.

EXERCISE.

1. In Italy there are immense plains, majestic rivers, very high mountains, lakes, cascades, forests, volcanoes, and beauty in all varieties.

2. A lady, speaking of a preacher whom she had heard from a great distance, said, "He spoke to me with' his hand, and I listened with' my eyes."

3. It is difficult to satisfy every one's desire in (the) great enterprises.

4. May God send us good princes, and may the devil not give them the fancy of wishing to be heroes!

5. (The) hypocrites cover themselves with the mask of (the) devotion.

6. Never leave flowers in a sleeping-chamber.

7. The greater part of (the) men live like crazy people, and die like fools.

8. One of the miseries of the rich is to be always deceived.

VOCABULARY.

1. There are, *vi sòno*; immense plains, *pianúra stermináta*; majestic rivers, *fúme maestóso*.

2. A lady, *una Signóra*; speaking, *párlando*; a preacher whom she had heard, *un predicatóre ch' élla avéa intésso*; far off, *mólto distánte*; said, *disse*; he has spoken to me, *égli m' ha parláto* (with the hands); I have listened to him, *io l' ho ascoltáto* (with the eyes).

3. Great enterprises, *gránd' imprésa*; it is difficult, *è cósá diffícile*; to satisfy, *secondáre*; desire, *desidério*; all, *tútti*.

4. May God send us, *Dio ci mándi*; good prince, *buóno príncipe*; devil, *diávolo*; not give them, *non díá lóro*.

5. Cover themselves, *si cóprono*.

6. Never leave, *non lasciáte mái*.

7. Live, *vivono*; die, *muóiono*.

8. Always deceived, *sémpre ingannáta*.

Dóve? where?
Che? what?

Chi? who?
Sovénte, often.

CONVERSATION.

Dóve éra la Signóra?
Con che si cópronno gl' ipócriti?
Quánti sènsi avéte?
Cóme si chiámano?
Abbiamo del víno?
È témpo di pranzáre?
Che cáne è quéstó?
Che recitáva Ariósto in compagnia de' suoi fratélli e delle sue sorélle?
Dóve sónó maraviglie in ógni gènere?
Che sónó ésse (they)?

Che disse úna Signóra d' un predicatóre?
Quáli persóne sónó sovénte ingannáte?
Quáli uómini vívono cóme pázzi?

Mólto distánte dél predicatóre.
Colla máschera délla divozione.
Cínque.
Udíto, vísta, odoráto, gústó, tátto.
Avéte úna bótte di víno.
Io ho pranzáto con alcúni amíci.
È un cáne da cácia.
Mólte commedióle, che fúrono il prelúdio delle immortáli sue ópere.
In Itália.

Fiúmi maestósi, cascáte, sélvo, volcáni, etc.
Egli mi ha parláto cólla máno.
Le persóne ricche.
La maggiór páрте degli uómini.

CHAPTER VII.

PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS IN THE NOMINATIVE.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

Chi bátte? Son io,
Se non voléte cantár vói, canterò io,
Non dubitáte: penserémo nói ad ógni cósá,

Who knocks? It is I.
If you do not wish to sing, I will sing.
Do not fear: we will think of every thing.

*Così dicéva ancór io,
 Vói faréte quel che vorrò io,
 Io vóglío fàre còme fàte vói,
 Non ci va ÉGLI, e non ci andréte
 nemméno voi,
 Avéte voi ròba? Avéte quat-
 trini?
 Che bélla còsa il potér dire,
 Comándo io!
 Gli faréte conóscere chi sòno io
 e chi siéte voi,
 Siéte vói il padròne di quésto
 albérgo?
 Poichè voléte che dica io, dirò
 io,
 Vói avéte migliór vísito che non
 ho io,*

*I also said so.
 You will do what I wish.
 I wish to do as you do.
 He will not go; and you will
 not go either.
 Have you property? Have you
 money?
 How beautiful it is to say, I
 command!
 Let him know who I am, and
 who you are.
 Are you the master of this ho-
 tel?
 As you wish that I say it, I
 will say it.
 You have better sight than I.*

PRONOUNS IN THE OBJECTIVE (CLASS I.).

Me, te, se,* lúi, lei, noi, voi, loro.
 Me, thee, one, him, her, us, you, them.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

*Che còsa voléte da ME?
 Ella è fuòri di sè dàlla ràbbia,
 Or óra sòno a VOI,
 Fàtemi la finézza di pranzàr
 MÉCO,
 Io ámo il mío amíco quánto ME
 STÉSSO,
 Sì, fàte voi, io mi rimétto in
 VOI, mi confído in VOI,
 Égli non sa far nùlla da SE,
 Lasciàte fàre a ME, non dubi-
 tàte,
 Degnáte far colaziòne con NÓI,*

*What do you wish of me?
 She is beside herself with anger.
 I am with you in a moment.
 Do me the pleasure to dine
 with me.
 I love my friend as much as
 myself.
 Yes, do what you will, I agree
 with you, I confide in you.
 He does not know how to do
 any thing by himself.
 Let me do it: never fear (do
 not doubt).
 Have the kindness to breakfast
 with us.*

* REMARK. — *Se* is indefinite, — one's self, themselves, etc.

*Egli non dománda VOI,
Non dico a VOI, Signór mío,
Verrò con VOI si voléte,
Io non vóglío partíre da VOI,
Quánto avéte spésó per LEI,*

He does not ask for *you*.
I do not speak to *you*, dear sir.
I will go with *you*, if you wish.
I do not wish to leave *you*.
How much have you spent for
her.

PRONOUNS * IN THE OBJECTIVE (CLASS II.).

Mi, ti, si, ci, vi, gli, le, loro.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

*Voi VI siéte dimenticáto DI ME,
Non MI dimenticherò DI VOI,
GLI è nato un figlio,
Che mále VI ho fáto io ?
Davvéro, io non VI capísco,
MI piáce la mia libertà,†
Fáte pur quél che VI páre,
La fortúna CI ruól béne,
VI raccomandádo di far quéstó,
Che cósa VI ha egli détto DI ME ?
Potéte dir LÓRO che éntрино,
Io VI láscio, perchè ho frétta,
Ho scrítto una léttera che MI
préme,
Che MI cománda il Signor
Tisio ?
Dio díce: AiutáTE, che TI aiu-
terò,
Dománi GLI darò da pránzo,
MI ricórdo ciò che MI avéte détto,
Amíco, CI rivedrémo staséra,
TI accérto che non LE dirò nulla,*

You have forgotten *me*.
I will not forget *you*.
A son is born to *him*.
What ill have I done *you* ?
Truly, I do not understand *you*.
I love my liberty.
Do as seems good to *you*.
Fortune wishes *us* well.
I recommend *you* to do this.
What has he said to you of *me* ?
You can tell *them* to come in.
I leave *you*, for I am in a hurry.
I have written a letter which
is important to *me*.
What does Mr. Tisio wish of
me ?
God says, Help *thyself*, and I
will help *thee*.
I will give *him* dinner to-mor-
row.
I remember what you have
said to *me*.
Friend, we shall see *each other*
this evening.
I assure *you* that I shall say
nothing to *him*.

* The conjunctive pronouns are employed only in the dative and accusative case.

† *Mi piace*, it pleases me.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS IN THE NOMINATIVE.

I.	<i>Io,</i>	I;	<i>Io dormo,</i>	I sleep.
	<i>Tu,</i>	thou;	<i>Tu pránzi,</i>	thou dinest.
	<i>Égli, éi, e', éssò,</i>	he;	<i>Égli balla,</i>	he dances.
	<i>Élla, éssa,</i>	she;	<i>Élla ride,</i>	she laughs.
	<i>Nói,</i>	we;	<i>Nói cantiamo,</i>	we sing.
	<i>Vói,</i>	you;	<i>Vói pensáte,</i>	you think.
	<i>Églino, éssi,</i>	they, m.;	<i>Églino scrivono,</i>	they write.
	<i>Élleno, ésse,</i>	they, f.;	<i>Élleno parlano,</i>	they speak.

REMARK. — *Égli, élla, églino, élleno*, are used for persons only; *éssò, éssa, éssi, ésse*, for persons and things.

II. In Italian, the pronoun is not used before an impersonal verb; as, *Piòve*, it rains; *névica*, it snows; *tuóna*, it thunders.

III. When the pronoun in the nominative is before a verb, the termination of which expresses clearly the person, it is generally suppressed, and is only used when more emphasis is required, or to avoid ambiguity; as, *Cúnto*, I sing; *cantò*, he sang; *canteréte*, you will sing; *ch' io cánti*, that I may sing; *che tu cánti*, that thou mayest sing; *ch' égli cánti*, that he may sing; *io lo díco*, I say it.

IV. When two or three pronouns, subjects in a phrase, are in apposition, they are expressed, and sometimes are placed after the verb; but the stress of the voice must be carefully laid upon the prosodic accent of the pronoun, because euphony must always be considered; as, —

<i>Díte quel che pensáte VOI; dirò</i>	Say what you think; then I
<i>pói quel che pénso IO,</i>	will say what I think.
<i>Se non voléte ballár VOI, ballerò</i>	If you do not wish to dance, I
<i>IO,</i>	shall dance.

V. The exclusive meaning expressed in English by *self*, as "I shall go myself," may be translated thus: *Andrò io*, with a marked accent; or, *andrò io stéssò*, or *io medésimo*. Thus we say, —

<i>Andrái tu stéssu or medésimo,</i>	Thou wilt go thyself.
<i>Andrà egli medésimo,</i>	He will go himself.
<i>Andrà ella medésima,</i>	She will go herself.
<i>Andránno èglino medésimi,</i>	They will go themselves.

REMARK. — Observe that the pronoun is suppressed before the verb.* In such phrases as "History itself proves it, his father has seen it himself," the Italians suppress the pronoun before *stéssu* or *medésimo*, self, and say, *La stória medésima ne fa féde, sùo pádre stéssu l'ha vedúto*.

VI. In interrogative phrases, the pronoun may be placed after the verb, or the interrogation marked by the inflection of the voice.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS IN THE OBJECTIVE.

CLASS I.

VII. These pronouns may be used in the direct or indirect regimen, — that is, they may be governed by the verb, or by a preposition; as, —

<i>Me,</i>	<i>me;</i>	<i>Pensáte a (to) me,</i>	Think of me.
<i>Te (thyself),</i>	<i>thee;</i>	<i>Pénsa per te,</i>	Think for thyself.
<i>Se (himself),</i>	<i>him;</i>	<i>È conténto di se,</i>	He is contented with him (self).
<i>Lui, éssu,</i>	<i>him;</i>	<i>Andáte con lui,</i>	Go with him.
<i>Léi, éssa,</i>	<i>her;</i>	<i>Non pensáte più a (to) léi,</i>	Think no more of her.
<i>Nói,</i>	<i>us;</i>	<i>Ègli parla di nói,</i>	He speaks of us.
<i>Vói,</i>	<i>you;</i>	<i>Ciò dipénde da vói,</i>	That depends on you.
<i>Lóro, éssi,</i>	<i>them, m.;</i>	<i>Ho bisógno di lóro,</i>	I have need of them.
<i>Lóro, ésse,</i>	<i>them, f.;</i>	<i>Vánno con lóro or ésse,</i>	They went with them.

VIII. When the adjective *stéssu* or *medésimo*, self, follows these pronouns, it must agree with them in gender and number; as, *Per léi stéssa, per lui stéssu, per lóro stéssi*, for herself, for himself, for themselves.

* 1. *Himself, herself*, after *to be, to appear, etc.*, are translated by *déssu, déssa*; as, *Ègli é déssu*, it is he himself; *mi par déssa*, it seems that it is she herself.

2. *I also, thou also, etc.*, are expressed by *anch'io*; or, *ancór io, ancór tu, etc.*; or, *io pure, tu pure, etc.*

IX. The student will be able to analyze the construction of the following phrases without difficulty : —

<i>Io vi aspetto,</i>	I await you.
<i>Io aspetto voi,</i>	It is you that I await.
<i>Voi mi aspettate,</i>	You await me.
<i>Voi aspettate me?</i>	Is it me that you await?
<i>Egli non ingannava me,</i>	It is not me that he deceived.

X. The pronouns *me* and *thee*, after an imperative, are *mi* and *ti*, which are joined to the verb ; as, *Ditemi*, tell me ; *allontanati*, go away.

XI. The pronouns *him*, *her*, *them*, as regimen, are translated into Italian by *se*, when they represent the same person as the subject, whilst persons different from the subject are expressed by *lui*, *lei* ; as, *Egli non parla se non di lui*, he speaks only of him, — if the word *lui* does not signify *egli* ; but, if it means the same person, then say, *egli non parla che di se*. — *Egli rinde conto a se stesso*, *ella rinde conto a se stessa* or *medesima*, he is accountable to himself, she is accountable to herself.

XII. To express *with me*, *with thee*, *with him*, one can say, *con me*, *con te*, *con se* ; or, *meco*, *téco*, *séco*. For *with us*, *with you*, the poets say, *nosco*, *vosco*.

CLASS II.

XIII. These pronouns are employed either as the direct or indirect regimen of a verb ; but they can never be accompanied by a preposition. They serve to conjugate the pronominal verbs.

<i>Mi</i> ,	me ;	<i>Io MI ricódo,</i>	I remember.
<i>Ti</i> ,	thee ;	<i>Tu TI pénti,</i>	Thou repentest.
<i>Si</i> ,	him ;	<i>Egli SI arrábbia,</i>	He is enraged.
<i>Ci</i> or <i>ne</i> ,*	us ;	<i>Noi CI divertiámo,</i>	We amuse ourselves.
<i>Vi</i> ,	you ;	<i>Vói VI stupíte,</i>	You astonish yourself.
<i>Si</i> ,	them ;	<i>Eglino SI spógliano,</i>	They undress themselves.
<i>Gli</i> ,	him ;	<i>Io GLI scriverò,</i>	I write to him.
<i>Le</i> ,	her ;	<i>Vói LE parleréte,</i>	You will speak to her.
<i>Lóro</i> ,	to them ;	<i>Noi aprirémo LÓRO,</i>	We will open to them.

* *It*, nominative, is not translated, or it is rendered by *egli* ; as, *Egli è un pèzzo*, it is long since.

XIV. To him is *gli*, and to her is *le*; thus, *Se gli scrivo, egli mi risponderà*, if I write to him, he will answer me; *ella piange quando uno le parla*, she weeps when one speaks to her.

XV. The pronoun *loro* is ordinarily placed after the verb; as, *Voi manderete loro questo libro*, you will send this book to them.

XVI. The *i* in the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc., may or may not be dropped before a vowel; as, *Egli mi onora*, or *m' onora*, he honors me. *Ci* never loses the *i* except before *e* or *i*. These rules are, however, euphonic.

We repeat, that *we* and *you* are *nói* and *vói* when subjects of the verb, or when preceded by a preposition; as, *Nói ridiamo, vói ridete*, we laugh, you laugh; *parlate per nós, e nós parleremo per vói*, speak for us, and we will speak for you. And, finally, they are expressed by *ci* and *vi* when they are in the objective, without a preposition expressed; as, *Egli ci guarda, io vi scriverò*, it regards us, I will write to you.

XVII. OBS.—We see that the pronouns in the objective, *me*, *thee*, *him*, etc., are divided into two classes, — *me*, *te*, *se*, *lui*, *lei*, etc., for the first class; and *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*, for the second. This arrangement is not, however, strictly followed in Italian, as the first class is often used in preference to the second, because the pronunciation is more striking. This is particularly the case in phrases where there is an apposition of pronouns; as, for example, *Io amo vói più che vói amate me*, I love you more than you love me; *io do a vói qu' sta spilla perchè vói avete dato a me un anello*, I give you this pin because you have given me a ring.

READING LESSON.

L' uómo	scioperáto	è	l' uómo	più	affaccendáto.	Egli	ha
	idle			most	occupied.		
cinquánta	amíci	che		si	créde	in	óbliggo
fifty	friends	whose (friendship)		believes			obliged

VOCABULARY.

1. Repudiated, *ripudiò*; wife, *moglie*; some persons, *alcuni*; astonished, *maravigliavano*; should (be) separated, *si fosse separato*; so pretty a woman, *una donna così vezzosa*; modest, *modesta*; showing, *mostrando*; his, *la sua*; said, *disse*; you see, *vedete*; well made, *ben fatta*; however, *però*; no one, *nessuno*; knows where, *sa dove*; hurts, *offenda*.

2. It was reported, *fu riferito*; Frederick the Great, *Federico il Grande*; had spoken ill, *sparlato*; if this person, *se costui*; a hundred thousand, *cento mila*; answered, *rispòsto*; no, *di no*; well, *bene*; added, *soggiunse*; I cannot, *non posso*; nothing, *nulla*; had, *avésse*; would declare war, *muoverei guerra*.

3. A young man, *un giovenotto*; passed for rich, *tenuto per ricco*; laden, *cárico*; debt, *débito*; was pensive, *stava tutto pensieroso*; evening before, *vigilia*; of his betrothal, *déi suoi sponsali*; parlor, *salotto*; of his future mother-in-law, *della sua futura suocera*; many times, *parécchie volte*; sir, *signóre*; always, *sémpre*; eight days after, *otto giorni dopo*; seeing arrive, *vedendo capitare*; a crowd, *una turba*; deceived, *ingannata*; I well informed you, *vi feci pur avvertita*; repeated, *ripetuta*; more than, *più di*; ten, *dieci*; in your, *nel vostro*; before, *prima*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

<i>Chi batte?</i>	<i>Son io.</i>
<i>Che cosa volete da me?</i>	<i>Voglio far colazione con voi.</i>
<i>Che cosa mi avete detto?</i>	<i>Non me ne ricordo.</i>
<i>Pagate voi il pranzo?</i>	<i>Sì, lo pago io.</i>
<i>Mi aspettate?</i>	<i>Non vi aspetto.</i>
<i>Di chi parla egli?</i>	<i>Egli parla di noi.</i>
<i>Come si chiama questa ragazza?</i>	<i>Èlla si chiama Carolina.</i>
<i>A chi scriverò io?</i>	<i>Al padre di Maria.</i>
<i>Ti pènti tu?</i>	<i>Io mi pènto.</i>
<i>Ci divertiamo noi?</i>	<i>Noi non ci divertiamo.</i>
<i>Chi vi dirà il nome di tutti gli speziáli della città?</i>	<i>L' uómo scioperato vi dirà il nome di tutti.</i>
<i>Siète voi il padrone di questa casa?</i>	<i>Sono il padrone di questo al- bergo.</i>
<i>Avete il bastone di mio fratel- lo?</i>	<i>Io non ho il suo bastone, voi l'avete.</i>
<i>Volète darmi un anello?</i>	<i>Non voglio darvi un anello, vi darò (will give) un libro.</i>

CHAPTER VIII.

PRONOUNS, PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE.

[Continuation of Preceding Lesson.]

To avoid several monosyllables, and for the sake of euphony, the Italians unite several words together. This union constitutes one of the chief beauties of the language. For example: the imperative *dátemelo* is composed of *date me lo*, give it to me; and, because the accent falls on the first syllable, the word has all the strength of the imperative, the desire of prompt obedience.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

LE reverisco divotaménte,
In che pòsso servir*LA*?
Cóme *VE* *LA* passáte?
Io *ME* *LA* pássó benóne,
VI *do* *la* *buóna* *nótte*,
Non *VI* *vóglío* *incomodáre*,
*Tornáte**VE**NE* *indiétro*,
GLIÉLO *póssó* *dir* *IO*,
*Andáte**GLIÉLO* *a* *dir* *VOI*,
LévamITi *dinánzi*, *temerário*,
Non *MI* *comparíte* *più* *dinánzi*,
Che *VE* *NE* *páre*?
RagioniámOLA *quí* *fra* *di* *NOI*,
FacciámOLA *da* *buóni* *amíci*,
Vói *non* *ME* *LA* *daréte* *ad* *in-*
téndere,

I have the honor to salute you.
 How can I serve you?
 How do you do?
 I am very well.
 I wish you good night.
 I do not wish to trouble you.
 Turn back.
 I can tell it to him myself.
 Go tell it to him yourself.
 Go out of my sight, insolent one.
 Never appear before me again.
 How does it seem to you?
 Let us reason here together.
 Let us act like good friends.
 You will not make me believe it.

I. A pronoun stands for a person or thing:—

<i>Lo</i> or <i>il</i> ,	him, it;	<i>Io</i> <i>LO</i> <i>védo</i> ,	I see it.
<i>La</i> ,	her, it;	<i>Tu</i> <i>LA</i> <i>conósci</i> ,	Thou knowest it.
<i>Li</i> or <i>gli</i> , m.,	them;	<i>Noi</i> <i>LI</i> <i>vediámo</i> ,	We see them.
<i>Le</i> , f.,	her;	<i>Io</i> <i>le</i> <i>aspétto</i> ,	I expect them.
<i>Ne</i> ,	of it;	<i>Voi</i> <i>NE</i> <i>ridéréte</i> ,	You will laugh at it.
<i>Ci</i> or <i>vi</i> ,	of you;	<i>Io</i> <i>CI</i> or <i>VI</i> <i>pénso</i> ,	I think of you.

II. *It* with the negative is expressed by *nol* or *non lo*; as, *Nol négo*, I do not deny it. In affirmative phrases, we can employ *il* when we wish to soften the pronunciation, and *lo* to express a graver tone; for such are the properties of the sound of the *i* and the *o*; as, *Il salutái*, or *lo salutái*, I salute him.

III. The pronouns *lo*, *il*, *la*; are placed before those verbs which commence with a consonant. *Lo* and *la* drop the vowel before a verb beginning with a vowel: *le* and *li* are placed both before consonants and vowels.

IV. There are a great number of Italian phrases in which the pronoun *la* refers to some noun understood; as, —

<i>Io ve LA dico schiétta,</i>	I tell you the truth frankly.
<i>Voi ve LA godéte,</i>	You lead a joyous life.
<i>Io me LA bátto,</i>	I run away.

V. The pronoun *gli* signifies *to him*; and *le*, *to her*: but, when they are joined with *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, *ne*,* *gli* is used for both masculine and feminine genders, and the letter *e* is interposed, as in the following examples: —

<i>Glíela</i> , it to her;	<i>Voi glíela daréte,</i>	You will give it to her or him.
<i>Glíeli</i> , them to him;	<i>Io glíeli manderò,</i>	I will send them to him or her.
<i>Glíele</i> , them to her;	<i>Glíele venderà,</i>	He will sell them to her.
<i>Glíene</i> , it of him;	<i>Voi glíene comperéte,</i>	You will buy it of him.

Besides *gliéne* for the feminine, the ancients also said *léne*.

* The pronouns *il*, *lo*, *li*, *la*, *le*, are the same words as the articles, and derived from the same source; as in the phrase, *Io vedo il re ed il salúto*, or *lo salúto*, I see the king, and salute him. The last form is the best.

Egli è facile, it is easy. Its objective is generally *lo*, — *Io lo so*, I know it.

The third person singular of the feminine (*ella* or *vosignoria*) is used instead of the second person plural (*voi*), in polite address: as, *Come sta ella?* how are you?

In poetry, in familiar conversation, *tu* (thou) is used.

Speaking to equals, they say *voi*, you.

When the third person singular feminine, *ella*, and its inflexions *le*, *la*, or the title *Vosignor a* (V. S.), are employed, the verb is used in the singular, and the words agreeing with them take the feminine gender, whether the person addressed be masculine or feminine. When more than one individual is addressed in the third person feminine, *elleno*, and its inflexion *loro*, or the title *Vostre Signorie*, are used, and the words agreeing with them are put in the feminine plural.

VI. Euphony requires that the *i* of the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *vi*, *ci*, should change the *i* into *e* when they are followed by the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *li*, *ne*; as, —

<i>Me lo</i> , it to me;	<i>Tu me lo dáí</i> ,	Thou givest it to me.
<i>Te la</i> , it to thee;	<i>Io te la do</i> ,	I give it to thee.
<i>Se li</i> , them to him;	<i>Egli se li farà dare</i> ,	He will cause them to be given to himself.
<i>Ce ne</i> , us of it;	<i>Noi ce ne occupiamo</i> ,	We occupy ourselves with it.
<i>Ve ne</i> , them to you;	<i>Io ve le presto</i> ,	I lend them to you.

VII. *Mel*, *tel*, *sel*, *cel*, *vel*, are written before a word which commences with a consonant, instead of *me lo*, *te lo*, etc.; as, *Égli sel figúra*, or *se lo figúra*, he figures it to himself; *io vel dicéva*, or *ve lo dicéva*, I said it to you.

VIII. Some ancient authors have often placed the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *li*, *le*, before *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*, when euphony permitted. Thus, instead of saying, *Dio te lo perdóni*, may God pardon you; they have said, *Dio il ti perdóni*.

IX. All the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*, *lo*, *la*, *gli*, *le*, *ne*, *me lo*, *te lo*, *se lo*, etc., whether simple or compound, are generally placed before the verb, except when used with an infinitive, a gerund, the second person singular, and the first and second plural of the imperative; in which cases they are placed after the verb to which they are joined, so as to make one word; thus, —

<i>Parlarmi</i> ,	To speak to me.	<i>Cercándolo</i> ,	Seeking him.
<i>Parlarmene</i> ,	To speak to me of it.	<i>Vendéngliela</i> ,	Selling it to him.
<i>Scrivetele</i> ,	Write to her.	<i>Mostrátene</i> ,	Show it to us.
<i>Ricordiamoci</i> ,	Let us remember.	<i>Dátame lo</i> ,	Give it to me.
<i>Compráteli</i> ,	Buy it of him.	<i>Leváteliela</i> ,	Take it from her.
<i>Guardátelo</i> ,	Look at him.	<i>Pensiamoci</i> ,	Let us think of it.

Observe that the infinitive loses the final *e* when the pronoun is joined to it; and if the infinitive terminates in *re*, as *condúrre*, it loses the syllable *re*, and we say, *Condúrmi*, conduct me.

X. To express "give it to me," "give it to us," etc., the conjunctive pronoun is placed after the personal in this way: *Dátame la dátace lo*.

XI. The pronoun is likewise placed after the word *ecco*, to which it is joined; as, *Eccómi*, *éccolo*, behold me, behold him.

XII. With the negation *non*, these pronouns are placed before the verb, except when the verb is in the infinitive; as, —

<i>Non GLIÉLO domádate,</i>	Do not ask it of him.
<i>Non ME NE dáte,</i>	Do not give it to me.
<i>Non LO facciámo,</i>	Let us not make it.
<i>Non LO facéndo, or non facéndolo,</i>	Not making it.

XIII. These pronouns are also joined to the past participle when the auxiliary is understood; as, *Rallegrátosi*, having rejoiced.

REMARK.—These pronouns admit of other transpositions, and very much assist in expressing an energetic, rapid, or gentle sentiment. For example, the phrase “I say it” may be constructed thus:—

<i>Lo dico,</i>	to express a grave sentiment.
<i>Il dico,</i>	to give a mild form to the phrase.
<i>Dicolo,</i>	to impress with the rapidity of the thought.
<i>Dicol,</i>	to join rapidity with sweetness.

The learner should, however, be careful not to place the pronoun after any other than the imperative, infinitive, and gerund.

XIV. The first consonant of the pronoun should be doubled whenever it is joined to a verb of one syllable, or one which has the grave accent upon the final vowel; as, *Dillo*, *dámmi*, *fállo*, tell it, give me, do it.

XV. The position of the pronoun can be changed for the sake of euphony; as, —

<i>Io lo vóglío vedére, or io vóglío vedérlo,</i>	I wish to see him.
<i>Io gliéne pòsso parláre, or io pòsso parlárgliene,</i>	I can speak to him of it.

XVI. In certain cases, the personal pronoun is changed into the possessive; as, *Mio malgrádo*, in spite of me: and, on the contrary, the possessive is sometimes changed into the personal; as, *Cavátevi il vestíto*, take off your coat.

READING LESSON.

Tra le varie nazione del mondo la pulitèzza ha introdótto
 politeness introduced
 infiniti úsi di salutàre. Pláuto párla di pópoli che si salutàvano
 modes salutation. Plato speaks
 tirándosi fórte l'orécchia. I Fránchi sí strappàvano un
 pulling strong (hard) ear. pulled out
 capéllo, e lo presentàvano álla persóna che volévano salutàre.
 hair presented they wished
 Al Giappóne un conoscénte vi salúta togliéndosi dal piéde úna
 Japan acquaintance taking foot
 pantófolà; e nèle Indie, égli viéne a préndervi per la bárba;
 slipper comes to take beard;
 áltri si salutàno voltándosi la schièna. Gl'isoláni del gránde
 others turning back. islanders
 oceáno frégano il lóro náso con quéllo délla persóna salutáta,
 rub nose that
 oppúre gli sóffiano nell'orécchio. Gli abitánti di Horn si
 or blow inhabitants
 córicano col vèntre a térra, e la maggiór pártè dei négri si
 lie down belly greater negroes
 préndono a vicénda le díta e le fáanno schricchiolàre. L'Inglése
 take turn make crack. Englishman
 in un eccéssò d'amiciázia vi affèrra per la máno e ve la scuóte
 fit friendship seizes shakes
 vigorosaménte cóme se volésse strappàrvi il bráccio. Quéstà
 if he wished to pull out arm. This
 gentilézza fa la véci dégli abbrácci dei Francési e degl'Italiáni.
 courtesy takes the place embraces

EXERCISE.

1. A thoughtless humorist saw three blind people in the street, who, keeping together, went begging. "Stop," said he to them; "take this crown, divide it between you, and pray God for me."

As to the crown, he gave it to neither of them. The blind men all thanked him at once, and ran quickly into a tavern, where they ordered a breakfast. When they were well satisfied, one said to the others, "Let him who has the crown pay the fare;" but each one answered, "I have it not: thou hast it." From hard words they came to blows; and gave so many blows with their sticks, that they broke every thing that was on the table, to the great detriment of the host.

2. The authors of the century of Louis XIV. have expressed great thoughts in simple words.

VOCABULARY.

1. Humorist, *burlone*; thoughtless, *spensierato*; saw in, *vide per*; keeping together, *strétti insieme*; went begging, *se ne andavano accattando*; stop, *fermatevi*; take, *togliete*; divide it, *spartitelo*; neither of them, *nessuno*; thanked, *ringraziarono*; all at once, *concordemente*; they ran, *córsero*; they ordered (make), *fanno*; well satisfied, *ben satólli*; that he who, *che chi*; pay, *pághi*; but each one answered, *al che ciascuno rispondendo*; thou hast it, *tu l' hai*; they came, *vénnero*; they gave, *diédéro*; so many, *tante*; blows, *bastonata*; they broke, *rupperò*; all that they found, *tutto che trovarono*; to the great detriment, etc., *con gran danno dell' óste*.

2. Have expressed, *hanno espresso*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Che è l' Italia?

Che avete?

Avete il libro?

È giovane la sorella del Signore?

Che fanno gl' isolani del grande oceano quando salutano?

E gli abitanti di Horn?

Che vide un burlone?

Che disse il burlone?

A chi diède egli uno scudo?

Cóme salutano gli Inglesi?

Qual è la prima legge?

Triónfa éssa sémpré?

Il giardino d' Európa.

Ho una rosa.

Non ho il libro, ho la penna.

Sì, ella è giovane.

Eglino frégano il loro naso con quello della persona salutata.

Si còricano vèntre a terra.

Egli vide tre ciechi.

Pregóte Dio per me.

Egli non lo diède a nessuno.

Vi afferrano per la máno e ve la scuótano.

La legge di Dio è la prima legge.

Sì, tosto o tardi.

CHAPTER IX.

THE ADJECTIVE — L' ADIETTIVO.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Glódo di vedervi in buóna salute,</i>	I am glad to see you well.
<i>Passerémo per la piú córta,</i>	We will take the shortest.
<i>Parliámoci schiétto,</i>	Let us speak clearly.
<i>Perchè avéte tanta premúra?</i>	Why are you so hurried?
<i>Quánti ánni avéte?</i>	How old are you?
<i>I ricchi hánno mólti amíci,</i>	The rich have many friends.
<i>Il bello piáce a tútti,</i>	The beautiful pleases all.
<i>Mólti póchi fánno un assái,*</i>	A little repeated makes much.
<i>Gl' ingrátí hánno póca memória,</i>	Ungrateful people have short memories.
<i>Chi perdóna ai cattívi, nuóce ai buóni,</i>	He who pardons the wicked, injures the good.
<i>Buon di, buóna séra, felice nótte,</i>	Good day, good evening, good night.
<i>Per mólti la fatica è póco sána,</i>	Labor is not healthy for many people.
<i>È úno che ha póchi pári,</i>	He is a man who has few equals.

ADJECTIVES : THEIR NUMBER, GENDER, ETC.

I. Italian adjectives all end in *o* or *e*. Those ending in *o* change the *o* into *a* for the feminine: those in *e* preserve the same form in both genders. The plural of adjectives is formed like that of nouns; as, —

SINGULAR.

<i>Pópulo líbero ed indipéndente,</i>	Free and independent people.
<i>Nazióne líbera ed indipéndente,</i>	Free and independent nation.

PLURAL.

<i>Pópoli líberi ed indipéndenti,</i>	Free and independent peoples.
<i>Nazióni líbere ed indipéndenti,</i>	Free and independent nations.

* Idioms and proverbs are marked i.

II. Some adjectives end either in *e* or in *o*; as, *Violente* or *violénto*. In this case one might say, *Un uómo violénte, una dónna violénte*, or *un uómo violénto, una dónna violénta*, a violent man, a violent woman.

III. The only adjectives terminating in *i* are *pári*, equal, and *dispári* or *impári*, unequal. These are invariable, whatever be the gender or the number of the noun to which they belong.

IV. The word *pári* is often used as a noun. It then has a possessive adjective after it; as, *Un pári mío, un pári vóstro, dei pári nóstri*, a man like me, like you, persons like us; *così si tratta cón un pári mío?* is it thus that one acts with a person of my rank?

V. Substantives used as adjectives, ending in *tóre*, change *tóre* into *tríce* for the feminine; as, *Autóre*, author; *autríce*, authoress, — except *dottóre*, *fattóre*, doctor, farmer; which make *dottoréssa*, *fattoréssa*. Other substantives used as adjectives form their feminine in *éssa*. Such are, *Poéta*, poet; *poetéssa*, poetess; *baróne*, baron; *baronéssa*, etc.

VI. Adjectives of quantity, — as, *Quánto*, how much; *tánto*, so much; *altrettánto*, as much; *tróppo*, too much; *póco*, little; *mólto*, much, — agree with their nouns; as, —

<i>Tánto orgóglio; tánta paura,</i>	So much pride; so much fear.
<i>Tánti sciócchi; tante volte,</i>	So many fools; so many times.
<i>Póco sangue; poca carne,</i>	Little blood; little meat.
<i>Mólti disgusti.</i>	Much (or many) chagrins.
<i>Altrettánti soldáti; altrettánte</i>	As many soldiers; as many
<i>dónne,</i>	women.
<i>Tróppo vénto; troppe ceremónie,</i>	Too much wind; too many
	ceremonies.
<i>Quánto vino? quante bontà?</i>	How much wine? how much
	kindness?

VII. The word "such" is sometimes translated by *così* *fátto*, *a*; *si fatto*, *a*; *as*, —

Guardátevi da così fatta ribaldaglia, Guard yourself against such a rabble.

VIII. The adjective *alquanto* (singular) signifies a little; *alquanti* (plural), some. *Parécchi, parécchie*, signify also *many*, and can be replaced by the word *più*, more; as, *Vi érano PARECCHIE ballerine*, or *PIU ballerine*, there were many dancers.

IX. The adjective *mézzo* agrees with the noun when it precedes it, but it is invariable after the noun; as, *Una mézza bottiglia*, half a bottle; *una bottiglia e mézzo*, a bottle and a half.

OBS. — *Mézzo*, when following a noun, takes no article.

X. The last syllable of the words *béllo, sánto, quéllo*, must be suppressed before masculine nouns commencing with a consonant. The adjective *gránde*, great, is written *gran* before masculine and feminine nouns, both in the singular and plural; as, —

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
<i>Bel giardino,</i>	fine garden.	<i>Béi or be' giardini.</i>
<i>Quél palázzo,</i>	this palace.	<i>Quéi or que' palázzi.</i>
<i>San Piétro,</i>	Saint Peter.	<i>Sánti Piétri.</i>
<i>Gran birbóne,</i>	great villain.	<i>Gran birbóni.</i>
<i>Gran regina,</i>	great queen.	<i>Gran regine.</i>

XI. *Buóno*, good, loses the *o* before a consonant; as, *Il buón víno fa buón sángue*, good wine makes good blood.

XII. To avoid the union of too many consonants, the last syllable of these adjectives is *not* retrenched before nouns commencing with *s*, when followed by another consonant; as, —

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
<i>Éllo spóso,</i>	handsome spouse.	<i>Bégli spósi.</i>
<i>Quéllo straniéro,</i>	that stranger.	<i>Quégli straniéri.</i>
<i>Gránde strépito,</i>	great noise.	<i>Grándi strepíti.</i>
<i>Gránde spáda,</i>	great sword.	<i>Grándi spáde.</i>
<i>Sánto Stéfano,</i>	Saint Stephen.	<i>Sánti Stéfani.</i>
<i>Buóno scólare,</i>	good scholar.	<i>Buóni scolári.</i>

XIII. The final vowel of the preceding adjectives is retrenched before a vowel, and replaced by an apostrophe ; as, *Bell' occhio*, fine eye ; *quell' asino*, that ass ; *grand' impéro*, great empire ; etc.

XIV. No fixed rules can be given to determine the place of the adjective, the Italians being guided by the ear. Usage generally places the adjectives expressive of form, color, and savor, after the noun ; as, —

<i>Távola quadráta,</i>	square table.
<i>Ábito turchíno,</i>	blue coat.
<i>Colór giállo,</i>	yellow color.
<i>Un Signóre italiáno,</i>	an Italian gentleman.
<i>Ácqua inzuccheráta,</i>	sugared water.
<i>Una rósa biánca,</i>	a white rose.

REMARKS.

The following observations will assist the student : —

The Italian adjective can be placed before or after the noun, and must agree with it in gender and number : euphony determines its position. Adjectives denoting materials, nations, dignity, color, taste, etc., are placed after the nouns ; as, *Cappéllo biáncó*, white hat ; *un uómo ciéco*, a blind man.

Participles and adjectives, preceded by an adverb, may be placed after the noun ; as, *Una cása tróppo píccola*, too small a house.

The position of some adjectives alters their signification : as, —

<i>Una certa cosa,</i>	a certain (that is any) thing.
<i>Una cosa certa,</i>	a certain (sure) thing.
<i>Grán cosa,</i>	something important.
<i>Una cosa gránde,</i>	a great thing.
<i>Un galantuómo,</i>	an honest man.
<i>Un uómo galánte,</i>	a polite man.
<i>La sóla mia figlia,</i>	my only daughter.
<i>Mia figlia sóla,</i>	my daughter alone.
<i>Un fiér uómo,</i>	a savage man.
<i>Un uómo fiéro,</i>	a proud man.
<i>Un póvero uómo,</i>	an unhappy man.
<i>Un uómo póvero,</i>	a poor man.

READING LESSON.

Giambattista Pigna, scrittore célèbre del fortunato século
writer century
 décimo sesto ci ha tramandato il ritratto seguente dell' Ariosto.
sixteenth transmitted portrait following
 L' Ariosto,* in quanto alla forma e all' aspetto del corpo aveva la
had
 statura alta, la testa calva, i capelli neri e crespi, la fronte
tall bald black curly
 spaziosa, le ciglia alte e sottili, gli occhi in dentro, neri, vivace,
thin
 e giocondi, il naso aquilino grande e curvo, le labbra raccolte,
lively lips contracted
 i denti bianchi ed eguali, le guance scarne e di colore quasi
cheeks hollow almost
 olivastro, la barba un poco rara che non cingeva il mento infino
olive-colored thin covered chin
 alle orecchie, il collo ben proporzionato, le spalle larghe e
neck well shoulders
 alquanto piegate, quali sogliono avere quasi tutti quelli che,
somewhat curved, as are accustomed to have those
 da fanciulli, hanno cominciato a stare inchiodati in sui libri: Le
nailed
 mani asciutte, i fianchi stretti. Egli dipinto dalla mano dell'
thin hips narrow. painted
 eccellente Tiziano, pare che ancor sia vivo. Un popolo fanatico
seems still alive.
 e superstizioso è un arma terribile nelle mani d' un despota.
 Ove la pelle del leone non basta bisogna aggiungervi quella
When skin sufficient to add
 della volpe.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. Osley, a famous beggar of London, made a fortune by using the following stratagem. He placed himself in streets where there was the greatest concourse of fashionable people: and, when he saw elegant ladies, he asked charity of them. If they refused,

* A few proper nouns of very remarkable people take the definite article in Italian; as, *Il Dante, l'Ariosto*, etc.

"Madam," said he to one, "in the name of your beautiful black eyes;" to another, "in the name of your fine hair;" to this one, "in the name of your rosy lips;" and, to that one, "in the name of your admirable figure." Finally came the divine legs; the charming feet, the majestic carriage: nothing was forgotten, and he returned home with his purse well filled.

2. A drunkard, who wished to excuse himself to his confessor for his too great love of wine, reasoned thus singularly: "My father, good wine makes good blood, good blood produces good humor, good humor creates good thoughts, good thoughts produce good works, and good works conduct man to heaven: then (the) good wine leads man to heaven."

VOCABULARY.

1. Made, *féce*; following, *segúente*; he placed himself, *égli si appostáva*; where there was, *óve éra*; fashionable people, *bel móndo*; when he saw, *allorchè vedéva*; refused, *ricusaváno*; admirable, *mirábile*; came, *venívano*; forgotten, *dimenticáto*.

2. Drunkard, *bevítóre*; wished, *voléa*; too great love of wine, *po' tróppo ghiótto del buon vîno*; reasoned thus singularly, *facéa quéstó curiosó argoménto*; makes, *fa*; produce, *producono*; creates, *fa nascere*; conduct, *ménano*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

<i>Sóno gli Americáni liberi?</i>	<i>Si sóno liberi ed indipendenti.</i>
<i>Che proclamazione è quella di cui si parla?</i>	<i>Si parla molto dell' emancipazione dei poveri* néri.</i>
<i>Che predicatore avete?</i>	<i>Abbiamo un bravo predicatore.</i>
<i>Come si chiama (called)?</i>	<i>L' amico dei poveri.</i>
<i>Dov' è la vostra Signora madre?</i>	<i>È nella chiesa di San Paolo.</i>
<i>Cosa è il vostro Signor padre?</i>	<i>È autore.</i>
<i>E sua moglie (wife)?</i>	<i>È dottoréssa.</i>
<i>Quanti anni ha Maria?</i>	<i>Ha nove anni.</i>
<i>Che statura ha ella?</i>	<i>Ha la statura piccola.</i>
<i>Di che colore è il suo abito?</i>	<i>Il suo nuovo abito è turchino.</i>
<i>Che buona cosa ha egli fatto?</i>	<i>Non posso (I cannot) dirvelo (tell you).</i>
<i>Chi è questa cara fanciullina?</i>	<i>Luisina. Ella è mia nipote.</i>
<i>Che occhi celesti!</i>	<i>Sì, ella ha l' aria d' un angioletta.</i>

* The repetition of the objective strengthens its expression; as, *Póvero*, poor; *pótero* *pótero*, very poor.

CHAPTER X.

ADJECTIVES : THEIR COMPARATIVES.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Vi sòno più pòveri che ricchi,</i>	There are more poor than rich.
<i>Le dónne sòno più compassion- evoli degli uòmini,</i>	Women are more compassion- ate than men.
<i>È meglio morire che témer sém- pre,</i>	It is better to die than always to fear.
<i>Quánto più vi pénso, tánto più mi vién rabbia,</i>	The more I think of it, the more I am enraged.
<i>Tuli dobbiámo éssere quáli vo- gliámo comparire,</i>	We ought to be such as we wish to appear.
<i>Il sóle è più gránde della térra,</i>	The sun is larger than the earth.
<i>La térra non è cosí piccòla cóme la lúna,</i>	The earth is not as small as the moon.
<i>La fámá di súa bellézza è mi- nóre assái della verità,</i>	The renown of her beauty is much below the truth.
<i>I creditóri migliór memória hánno che i debbitóri,</i>	Creditors have a better memo- ry than debtors.
<i>È meglio fáre invidia che pietà,</i>	It is better to cause envy than pity.
<i>L' usuráio è peggióre del ládro,</i>	The usurer is worse than the thief.
<i>Il víno è il mio maggiór ne- míco,</i>	Wine is my greatest enemy.

THE COMPARISONS OF ADJECTIVES.

I. A comparison can only be made between two objects. An object may be more beautiful, less beautiful, and as beautiful as another. There are, therefore, three degrees of comparison, — the degrees of superiority, of inferiority, and of equality.

II. The comparative of superiority is indicated by the words *più*, more; *mólto più* or *assái più* or *vie più*, much more; *miglióre*, better (a.); *maggióre*, greater; *méglio*, better (ad.).

III. The comparative of inferiority is expressed by the words *méno* or *máncó*, less ; *mólto méno* or *assái méno* or *vie méno*, much less ; *peggióre*, worse (a.) ; *minóre*, smaller ; *péggio*, worse (ad.).

IV. The conjunction *than*, which joins the two terms of comparison, is translated by *di* when it is followed by a pronoun or a possessive or demonstrative adjective.

He is much happier than you,	<i>È mólto più felice di voi.</i>
Your sister is prettier than mine,	<i>Vóstra sorélla è più bélla délla mia.</i>
There are no people more credulous than those who have an interest in being deceived,	<i>Non v'è gente più crédula di quélla che ha intérésse di és-sere ingannáta.</i>

V. *Than* is sometimes translated by *che*, especially if the phrase is elliptical. *Di*, however, may always be used.

VI. If *than* is followed by any other word, and there is a complement of the phrase understood, it can be translated by *di* or by *che*; as in the following examples : —

Is man more happy than woman (is happy) ?	<i>È l'uómo più felice délla donna? or che la donna?</i>
The stomach digests water more easily than wine,	<i>Lo stómaco digerisce più facil-ménte l'acqua che il víno.</i>

VII. It is better to use *che* for *than*, when the comparison is made between two verbs, two adjectives, or two adverbs ; as, —

There are more poor than rich,	<i>Vi sómo più póveri che ricchi.</i>
It is better late than never,	<i>È méglío tårdi che mái.</i>
It is better to save a culpable person, than to condemn an innocent one,	<i>È méglío salváre un colpévole, che condannáre un innocénte.</i>

VIII. If the natural order of the words is inverted, — that is to say, if the verb is placed before the subject, — it is better to use *che*. This rule may be applied to phrases where *than* is followed by a demonstrative adjective ; as, —

He who attacks, always has more courage than he who defends himself, *Più ánimo ha sémpré colui che assálta, che colui che si difénde.*

IX. To translate "more than three years," "more than twenty thousand men," etc., we say, Three years and more, twenty thousand men and more, *tre ánni e piú, vénti míla uómini e piú.*

X. The comparative of equality is indicated by *così* or *tánto*: and the conjunction *than* is translated by *cóme*, if *così* has been used; and by *quánto*, if *tánto* has been used; as, —

The eye of the domestic never sees as well as the eye of the master, *L' ócchio del servitóre non véde mái così béne cóme l' ócchio del padróne; or, non véde mái tánto béne quánto l' ócchio, etc.*

XI. Sometimes the word *così* or *tánto* is suppressed; as, —

A skin as white as snow, *Una pèlle biánca cóme or quánto la néve.*

XII. When the words *as many* and *as* refer to a noun, *as many* must be rendered by *tánto*, and *as* by *quánto*, making them agree in gender and number with the noun; as, —

He has as many debts as there are stars in the sky, *Égli ha tónti; or, altrettanti débiti quánte sóno le stéllé nel ciélo.*

See the strawberries. Take as many as you wish, *Écco délle frógole. Prendéte ne quánte voléte.*

XIII. In English we say (with the complement understood), —

I have as much money as you (have). *Naples is not as populous as Paris (is).*

In Italian, the complement is generally expressed in similar phrases; as, —

Io ho tónti danári quánti ne avéte voi. *Népoli non ha tén-ta popola-zíone quánta ne ha Parigi.*

XIV. Sometimes *tanto* or *quanto* is placed before *more* or *less*, so as to give more energy to the expression ; as in the following phrases : —

<i>Quanto più uno è ignorante,</i>	The more ignorant a person
<i>tanto più egli è pronto nel</i>	is, the more ready he is to
<i>giudicare,</i>	judge.
<i>L'aria è tanto più densa quan-</i>	The air is much more dense as
<i>to è più propinqua alla terra,</i>	it is nearer the earth.

XV. *As well as*, and *as much as*, signifying *as*, are translated by *così*, *come*, or *quanto*, and are invariable ; as, I know him as well as you, *io lo conosco come* or *quanto voi*. One can say, also, *io lo conosco al par di voi*.

READING LESSON.

I Románi, nei lóro stravízzi, bevévano tánti bicchiéri di víno
 banquets, drank
 quánte érano le lèttere del nóme déi lóro amíci ai quáli facé-
 they
 vano bríndisi. Catóne, il censóre, che vedéa (sórgere)
 made (drank) honor (health). saw to come
 la pómpa délla ménsa, dísse, che éra assái malagévole il salváre
 difficult save
 úna città dóve un péscé si vendéva più cáro di un búe. Di
 fish was sold
 dúe negoziatóri in política vince sémpré il più scáltro ; cioè chi
 conquers always sharp ; that is
 sa méglío ingannáre l'áltro. Il diávolo non è così brútto comé
 to cheat
 si dipínge. Non è cósa nel móndo più prezíosa del témpo. La
 painted.
 nója è fórse il maggiór mále che sía uscíto dal vaséllo di Pan-
 ennui went
 dóra. I sógni sóno le immágni del dè, guáste e corróte. L'óro,
 spoiled corrupted.
 come il fuóco, e buón servitóre ma cattívo padróne. Gli déste una
 gave
 líbbra, dátémene altrettánto.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. It is difficult to decide if irresolution renders man more unhappy than despicable, and if it is more inconvenient to take a bad part than not to take any.

2. Usage is always introduced by the ignorant, who form the greatest number (in society).

3. Two consolations solace the heart of the unhappy: one is, to recall the time when he lived more happily; and the other, to see that there are some in the world more unhappy than he.

4. The city of Naples is more beautiful in darkness than London is when the sun shines.

5. The fatter the kitchen, the leaner the testament.

6. Since we cannot make men what we would have them, it is necessary to bear with them as they are, and make the best of them.

VOCABULARY.

1. Man, *se*; renders, *fa*; unhappy, *infelice*; despicable, *dispregévole*; if there are, *se vi sòno*; to take a bad part, *appigliarsi ad un cattivo partito*; not to take any, *non appigliarsi ad alcuno*.

2. Usage, *uso*; introduced by, *introdótto da*.

3. Solace, *sollévano*; is to recall, *il rimembrarsi*; when (in which), *in cui*; he lived, *visse*; to see (to think), *pensare*; more unhappy, *con maggiór dóglia*.

6. Since, *poichè*; we can, *possiamo*; we would, *vorremmo*; we must, *convienne*; bear with, *tollerare*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Chi è più felice, l' uómo o la donna? *L' uno non è più felice che l' áltra.*

Qual è mégljo per lo stómaco, l' ácqua o il víno? *Per i giòvani l' ácqua è mégljo che il víno.*

Vi sòno mólti rícchi in Lón-dra? *Sì, ma vi sòno più póveri che rícchi.*

Pensáte (do you think) che io sòno infelice? *Siéte móltó più infelice di me.*

È bélla la Signorína Rósa? *Sì, ma vostra sorélla è più bélla ancóra.*

È brúta la lóro zía? *Non è cósi brútta cóme si díce (they say).*

<i>Hanno i creditori buona memoria?</i>	<i>Essi hanno miglior memoria che i debitori.</i>
<i>Avete nemici?</i>	<i>Il vino è il mio maggior nemico.</i>
<i>Qual è la cosa più preziosa nel mondo?</i>	<i>Nel mondo non è cosa più preziosa del tempo.</i>
<i>Quante braccia (yards) di questo panno volete?</i>	<i>Ne ho quante ne voglio (I wish).</i>
<i>Luigi, siete studioso?</i>	<i>Sì, ma quanto più studio (I study) tanto meno imparo (I learn).</i>

CHAPTER XI.

THE ADJECTIVES: SUPERLATIVES.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Parigi è una bellissima città,</i>	<i>Paris is a most beautiful city.</i>
<i>Avete pochissimi riguardi,</i>	<i>You have very little regard.</i>
<i>Fu uomo integerrimo,</i>	<i>He was an upright man.</i>
<i>Di cattivo egli diventò pessimo,</i>	<i>From bad he has become worse.</i>
<i>Godo un' ottima salute,</i>	<i>I enjoy excellent health.</i>
<i>È uomo di pochissime parole,</i>	<i>He is a man of very few words.</i>
<i>Ho veduto una bellissima ragazza,</i>	<i>I have seen a very beautiful girl.</i>
<i>Vi servirò puntualissimamente,</i>	<i>I will serve you most punctually.</i>
<i>Infelicitissimo è l'uomo che non ha amici,</i>	<i>Very unhappy is the man who has no friends.</i>
<i>Mi rincresce assaiissimo ch' egli parta,</i>	<i>I am very sorry that he is going away.</i>
<i>Quella gente è di ottimo cuore,</i>	<i>These people have an excellent heart.</i>
<i>Notate ogni minima cosa,</i>	<i>Take notice of the smallest thing.</i>
<i>A tutti il riso è gratissimo,</i>	<i>A smile is very agreeable to everybody.</i>
<i>Venne una dirottissima pioggia,</i>	<i>There was a pouring rain.</i>

THE SUPERLATIVE ABSOLUTE.

- | | | | |
|-------------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|-------------|
| 1. <i>Cattivissimo,</i> | <i>mólto cattivo,</i> | <i>assái cattivo,</i> | very bad. |
| 2. <i>Savissimo,</i> | <i>mólto sávio,</i> | <i>assái sávio,</i> | very wise. |
| 3. <i>Freschissimo,</i> | <i>mólto frésco,</i> | <i>assái frésco,</i> | very fresh. |
| 4. <i>Larghissimo,</i> | <i>mólto lárgo,</i> | <i>assái lárgo,</i> | very large. |

I. We see, by the above examples, that the superlative is formed by *issimo*, *mólto*, or *assái*. *Issimo*, taken from the Latin, is united to the adjective, the final vowel of which is retrenched. When the adjective ends in *io*, both vowels are dropped. If the adjective ends in *co* or *go*, the letter *h* is placed after the *c* or *g*, to preserve the hard sound of these letters. The words *amíco* and *nemíco*, friend and enemy, are exceptions: they make *amicíssimo*, *nemicíssimo*.

II. *Very*, before a past participle, is rendered by *mólto* or *assái*; as, He is very much esteemed by every one, *égli è mólto stimáto da tútti*. We cannot say, *Égli è stimatíssimo da tútti*. But, if the past participle is used simply as a qualificative adjective, then it receives the superlative *issimo*; and we say, *Mio stimatíssimo signóre*.

III. The following words express the superlative of themselves :—

<i>Óttime,</i>	very good.	<i>Ínfimo,</i>	very low.
<i>Péssimo,</i>	very bad.	<i>Egrégio,</i>	very noble.
<i>Sómme,</i>	highest.	<i>Mássimo,</i>	supreme.
<i>Estrémo,</i>	extreme.	<i>Misérrimo,</i>	very unhappy.
<i>Stupéndo,</i>	wonderful.	<i>Acerrímo,</i>	very bitter.
<i>Insigne,</i>	renowned.	<i>Integerrímo,</i>	entirely honest.

IV. The particle *stra* (extra) is prefixed to a few words, giving them a superlative signification; as, *Strarícce*, very rich; *stracótte*, very much cooked.

V. The adverbs terminating in *mente* (corresponding to *ly* in English), from the Latin *mens*, which is feminine, form their superlative in *issima*; as, *grandíssima-mente*.

REMARK. — The termination *issimo* serves in Italian for the superlative absolute, and can never be translated in English by those superlatives ending in *st* or *est*, which are of the relative kind. The latter must be rendered by the adjective, preceded by *il più*, *la più*, etc.; as, *Il più corto poema* (not *cortissimo poema*), the shortest poem.

THE SUPERLATIVE RELATIVE.

VI. This superlative is formed by the words *il più* or *il ménò*, suppressing the article when *più* or *ménò* comes after the noun; as, *Demòstene fu l'oratóre più eloquente délla Grécia*, Demosthenes was the most eloquent orator of Greece. But, if the adjective is placed before the noun, then the article is used; as, *Demòstene fu il più eloquente oratóre délla Grécia*.

The words *mássimo*, *ínfimo*, are also superlative relatives, and signify *the greatest*, *the lowest*; as, —

Io lo vedrò col mássimo piacere. I shall see him with the greatest pleasure.

READING LESSON.

Il Dúca d'Épernon, prima di morire, scrisse al cardinale di
before dying, wrote

Richelieu, e terminò la lettera "col vostro umilissimo ed obbidientissimo servo," ma ricordandosi che il cardinale non gli aveva
remembering

dato che dell'affezionatissimo, mandò uno apposta per
given sent on purpose (an express)

trattenere la lettera che era già partita, la principiò da capo,
to retain recommenced

sottoscrisse affezionatissimo, e morì contento.
subscribed died

Un cattivissimo autore diede in luce un libro, che aveva
gave (brought) light
per titolo, "dell'anima delle bestie:" Voltaire, avendolo letto, disse ad un amico che gliene chiedeva il suo parere, l'autore è un
asked

óttime cittadino, ma non è abbastánza informato délla stória del
sufficiently informed
 súo paése.

Io non conósko migliór preservatívo cóntro la nója che di
know against ennui
 adempíre esattissimaménte i próprij dovéri.
to fulfil own duties.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. Louis XI. and Ferdinand of Arragon were both cruel and perfidious, notwithstanding the first took the title of Very Christian, and the second that of Catholic.

2. The study of languages is very useful and very agreeable.

3. It has been said, that a nation of wise men would be the most foolish people in the world, as an army of captains would be the worst army.

4. When there was an eclipse of the moon, the Romans were accustomed to recall its light by beating upon copper vases in a very noisy manner, and by raising towards heaven a great number of flambeaus and lighted firebrands.

5. The bravest man on earth would become a coward by three days' fasting.

6. The language of a people is the most important monument of its history.

VOCABULARY.

1. Louis XI., *Ludovico undécimo*; Ferdinand of Arragon, *Ferdinando d'Arragóna*; notwithstanding, *nonostante*; took, *prese*; that, *quello*.

2. Agreeable, *piacevole*.

3. It has been said, *fu detto*; foolish, *pazzo*; as, *cóme*; worst, *il più cattivo*.

4. There was, *succedeva* (succeeded); were accustomed, *solévano*; recall, *richiamare*; light, *chiaróre*; by beating, *col battere*; very noisy, *strepitosamente*; copper, *ráme*; to raise, *sollevare*; flambeau, *fáce*; lighted, *acceso*.

5. Three, *tre*; would make (become) *farebbe*; coward, *poltrone*; brave, *valoroso*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

<i>Come avéte dormíto?</i>	<i>Ho dormíto saporífissimaménte.</i>
<i>È il Sig. D. buón cittadino?</i>	<i>È un óttimo cittadino.</i>
<i>L'avéte vedúto?</i>	<i>Sì, spessissime vólte.</i>
<i>Fu crudéle Ludovico XI.?</i>	<i>Sì, crudéle e pérfido.</i>
<i>Prése égli un título?</i>	<i>Prése il título di cristianíssimo.</i>
<i>Siéte conténto?</i>	<i>Sóno contentíssimo.</i>
<i>Non è quésť elefánte mólto gránde?</i>	<i>Égli è grandíssimo e fortíssimo.</i>
<i>Qual mése è il piú frédde (cold) dell' ánno?</i>	<i>Il mése di Febbráio è ordinariaménte freddíssimo.</i>
<i>Che stúdio è utilíssimo?</i>	<i>Lo stúdio délle lingue è utilíssimo e piacevolíssimo.</i>
<i>È il vóstro generále valoróso?</i>	<i>Sì, è l' uómo piú valoróso délla térra.</i>
<i>Quáli sóno i metáli piú pesánti?</i>	<i>Il plátino e l' óro sóno i piú pesánti metáli.</i>
<i>Qual animále è il piú crudéle?</i>	<i>La tigre è un animále crudelíssimo; è piú crudéle di tútti gli altri animáli.</i>

CHAPTER XII.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

The signification of many words, both nouns and adjectives, may be either increased or diminished by the addition of certain syllables to their termination.

I. The augmentatives, reducible to rules, are formed in *one* (m.), *óna* (f.), *ótto* (m.), *ótta* (f.), to signify bigness and stoutness, in a good sense.

Likewise in *accio* (m.), *accia* (f.), to signify something of a disgusting or contemptible bulk.

The addition *dne* expresses a great abundance of any thing.

EXAMPLES.

<i>Libro</i> ,	book ;	<i>libróne</i> ,	a very large book.
<i>Ragázza</i> , f.,	a girl ;	<i>ragazzóna</i> ,	a stout jolly girl.
<i>Casa</i> ,	a house ;	<i>casotto, casotta</i> ,	a good roomy house.
<i>Sala</i> ,	a parlor ;	<i>salotto</i> ,	a good sitting-room.
<i>Cavállo</i> ,	a horse ;	<i>cavallaccio</i> ,	a great ugly horse.
<i>Casa</i> ,	a house ;	<i>casaccia</i> ,	an ugly large house.
<i>Bestia</i> ,	beast ;	<i>bestiame</i> ,	cattle.

Observe that many nouns have a natural ending in *accia*, *accio*, and *áme*, without being augmentatives. Observe, also, that masculine augmentatives often come from feminine nouns, as *cdsone* (m.), from *cdsa* (f.).

II. The diminutives reducible to rules are formed in *ino*, *ello*, *étto*, with the variations incident to adjectives and substantives in *o* ; as, —

Carino (m. s.), *carina* (f. s.), *carini* (m. p.), *carine* (f. p.), dear pretty little creature, or creatures ; from *cáro*.

Poveréllo, poverella, poverélli, poverélle, poor little creature, or creatures ; from *póvero*.

Libréttó, a pretty little book ; from *libro*. *Acquétta*, a clear small stream ; from *acqua*. Such diminutives generally denote *endearment* and *smallness*.

Other diminutives, ending chiefly in *uccio*, *uccia*, and *uzzo*, *úzza*, indicate something small or contemptible ; as,

Casúccia, a small mean-looking house ; from *casa*, house.

Uomúzzo, a puny little fellow ; from *uómo*, man.

Yet all these rules are liable to exceptions, which nothing but practice can teach ; for, besides the terminations which we have just given for augmentatives and diminutives, many others are freely used in familiar conversation, and in books on trivial subjects. Thus, from *dónna*, a woman, *cása*, house, *libro*, a book, may be formed the following augmentatives and diminutives : —

<i>Donnóne</i> , a tall, stout, masculine woman	. . .	from <i>dónna</i> .
<i>Donnóna</i> , a tall, strong, healthful woman	. . .	” ”
<i>Donnaccia</i> , an impudent, shameful virago	. . .	” ”

<i>Donnétta</i> , a pretty little, prattling woman . . .	from <i>dónna</i> .
<i>Donniciuóla</i> , a mean-looking woman	" "
<i>Donnicétta</i> , a pretty little woman	" "
<i>Donnácchia</i> , a vulgar woman	" "
<i>Donnaccióne</i> , a bold, impudent, stout woman . . .	" "
<i>Casóne</i> , a very large house; a mansion	from <i>cása</i> .
<i>Casáccia</i> , a large, ill-contrived house	" "
<i>Casaménto</i> , a well-built, roomy house	" "
<i>Casípola</i> and <i>casúpola</i> , a small, despicable house .	" "
<i>Casucciáccia</i> , a small, wretched house	" "
<i>Casíle</i> , a poor, thatched cottage	" "
<i>Casélla</i> , a small, low-built house	" "
<i>Casóttá</i> , a snug, comfortable house	" "
<i>Casétta</i> , a snug house; also, a neat kennel	" "
<i>Casellína</i> , a very little but genteel house	" "
<i>Casettíno</i> (m.), <i>casettína</i> (f.), a neat, pretty cottage,	" "
<i>Casína</i> , a very small house	" "
<i>Casíno</i> , a small, neat, summer house	" "
<i>Libróne</i> , a bulky, heavy book	from <i>libro</i> .
<i>Libráccio</i> , an ugly, large book	" "
<i>Libricólo</i> and <i>libercólo</i> , a small, contemptible book .	" "
<i>Libréttó</i> , a pretty, neat, little book	" "
<i>Libréttino</i> , a very little and pretty book	" "
<i>Libriccino</i> , a very small pamphlet	" "

And so on, with thousands of other words, in all the range of humor and whims. But few augmentatives and diminutives are admitted in a style strictly correct, beyond those in *óne*, *áme*, *accio*, for increasing; and those in *íno*, *étto*, *éllo*, for diminishing.

The termination *ágliá* indicates an indeterminate number, and can be applied only to individuals, and always in a bad sense; as, *Ragázza*, child; *ragazzágliá*, a great number of wicked children; *plebágliá*, *gentágliá*, from *plébe*, *génte*, meaning a great number of low people, vulgar persons. This termination is feminine.

Ástro gives a bad qualification, and is applicable only to professions; as, *Médico*, a physician; *medicástro*, a bad physician; *filosofástro*, *poetástro*, a bad philosopher, a bad poet. However; we can say *giovindástro*, for a

naughty boy; *verdastro*, *olivastro*, *biancastro*, etc., of a greenish, olive, whitish color, etc.

Besides this quantity of augmentatives and diminutives which modify the nouns in so many different ways, there are still several others which are called irregular, because they only belong to a few words. Such are —

Medicónzolo, a bad physician; from *médico* and *ónzolo*.

Leprátto, small hare; from *lépre* and *átto*.

Cagnuolino, little dog; from *cáne*, *nólo*, *ino*.

Omiciátto, poor little man; from *uómo*, *iccio*, *átto*.

Tristanzuólo, unwholesome; from *trísto* and *anzuólo*.

A diminutive syllable may also be added to some verbs, such as *vivacchiáre*, to live poorly; from *vivere*: *leggi-chiáre*, to read carelessly; from *leggere*: *innamoracchiársi*, to be slightly in love; from *innamorársi*.

We can join together the augmentative terminations, and thus form a double augmentative; as, *Omáccio*, bad man; *omaccióne*, a very bad man: from *uómo*, *accio*, *óne*.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Mangiáte un bocconcíno di páne,</i>	Eat a little mouthful of bread.
<i>Dátegli un' occhiatína,</i>	Give him a slight glance.
<i>È úna fanciullétta semplicína,</i>	She is a very simple little girl.
<i>Égli ha un póco del goffóto,</i>	He is a little foolish.
<i>Siéte un cattivéllo,</i>	You are a naughty little one.
<i>Che ventarélló che tráe!</i>	What a pleasant little wind!
<i>Abbiáte un tantíno di giudízio,</i>	Have a little sense.
<i>È un pézzo di volpóne,ⁱ</i>	He is a sly-boots.
<i>Égli è un bello zerbinóto,</i>	He is an elegant young man.
<i>Com 'è bellína e leggiadrétta!</i>	How pretty she is! how graceful!
<i>Vorréi dirvi due parolíne,</i>	I wish to say two brief words to you.
<i>Ha úna brútta linguáccia,</i>	He has a very wicked tongue.
<i>Égli ha céra d' úno scimiottíno,</i>	He has the face of a little monkey.
<i>È un ragazzáccio ignorantóne,</i>	He is a very ignorant ugly child.

*Státe zitta, sfacciatélla!
 Che visíno grasiosétto!
 Intrattenétevi un momentíno,
 Vói státe benóne,
 Fa cón tútti il dottorélló,ⁱ
 Ma guardáte che amoríno!
 Quél gonnellíno è gentíle,
 Dov' è il mío berrettíno da nótte?
 È nel cassettíno délla távola,*

*Mi rispóse con úna scrollatína
 di cápo,
 Quélla vóstra nipotína è un
 angiolétta,
 Bélla facciótta ha quéstá ra-
 gázza!
 Va vía, asináccio, sénza cre-
 ázza!
 Quéi pasticcétti mi consólano il
 cuóre,
 In Lóndra le cásé non hánno
 portóni,
 Dátemi úna spazzolatína al
 tabárro,
 Ho già fáttö un migliaréllo,
 È ricciúto, biondétto, e bassóto,
 Mi vuói tu fáre un servigétto?
 Ho fáttö alcúne spaserélle,
 Aspettátemi un quarticélló d'óra,
 Quél birbantélló me l' ha fátta,
 Le seráte d' invérno són lunghétte,
 Ha un bocchíno che innamóra,
 Guardátevi da quélla ribaldág-
 lia,*

Be quiet, impudent little one!
 What a pretty little face!
 Stop only a little moment.
 You are very well.
 He plays the wise man.
 See the little darling!
 That little skirt is very nice.
 Where is my small night-cap?
 It is in the little drawer of the
 table.
 He answered me by a little
 shake of the head.
 Your little niece is a little an-
 gel.
 What a beautiful face this girl
 has!
 Go away, great ass, without
 education!
 These little cakes rejoice my
 heart.
 In London the houses have not
 coach-doors.
 Give a little stroke of the brush
 to my cloak.
 I have already gone a short
 mile.
 He is little curly-headed, pret-
 ty blonde, and pretty small.
 Will you do me a little ser-
 vice?
 I have made some trifling ex-
 penses.
 Wait for me a brief quarter of
 an hour.
 This little rogue has tricked
 me.
 Winter evenings are rather
 long.
 She has a ravishing small
 mouth.
 Mistrust that rabble.

*Gli ho tiráto úna sassáta,
Le mattináte sòn freschéte,
Si è fatta úna corpacciáta,
Siéte un bel ribaldonáccio,
Il poverétto è magricciúolo,
Veníte nél mio salottíno,
Élla ha un bél braccióttó,
Che tempáccio fá quest' oggì!
Che spallácce da fáccíno!*

Oh! cára la mía gioiétta!

I have thrown a stone at him.
The mornings are a little cool.
He has eaten to satiety.
You are a great villain.
The poor fellow is rather thin.
Come into my little parlor.
She has a beautiful little arm.
What bad weather it is to-day!
What great shoulders for a porter!
O my dear little jewel of a woman!

REMARK. — It will be seen by the above examples, that the Italian language admits of the frequent use of augmentative and diminutive terminations. These last modify the signification of words in much the same way as the terminations *kin, ling, ing, ock, en, el*, in English; as, lamb-*kin*, duck-*ling*, hill-*ock*, chick-*en*, cock-*erel*, etc. Augmentative terminations have no corresponding meaning in English.

Augmentatives and diminutives form one of the striking beauties of the Italian language; but, as no strict rules can be given concerning them, the student is cautioned not to venture upon their use until familiar with the language.

CONVERSAZIONE.

*Chi è fanciullíno?
Dóve dimóra (lives) égli?
Che avéte?
Di che colóre?
Che uómo è égli?
Chi è quésto cattivéllo?
Avéte vedúto (seen) mía cugína?

Dátemi úna canzóne, se vi piáce,

Albiáte ún tantíno di giudizio
nel parláre?*

*Il mio fratéllo è fanciullíno.
In un casinó.
Ho un caníno.
Biancástro.
È una cattíva linguáccia.
È figlio del medicónzolo.
Sì! Com' è bellína e leggiadrétta!
Non ho che quésta canzoncína,
prendétela (take it).
L'ho, non vi páre, quándo vi
dico (I say) che siéte un
bél zerbinóttó?*

CHAPTER. XIII.

THE NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Vo a letto alle undici in punto,</i>	I go to bed precisely at eleven.
<i>Mi álzo alle diéci precise,</i>	I rise precisely at ten.
<i>Vi andrémo una vólta per úno,</i>	We will each go there once.
<i>Vi són tórti d'ámbo le párti,</i>	There are wrongs on both sides.
<i>Gli ho détto a quátt' ócchi le mie ragióni,⁴</i>	I told him my way of thinking, face to face.
<i>Il capitále mi frúttà il séi per cénto,</i>	The capital yields me six per cent.
<i>Quánto impórtàno dúe ánni di frútti, al cinque per cénto, di un capitále di mille sètte cénto novánta dúe fránchi?</i>	What is the interest of one thousand seven hundred and ninety-two francs for two years, at five per cent?
<i>Cárlò ottávo scése in Itália nel mille quáttro cénto novánta quáttro,</i>	Charles VIII. went into Italy in one thousand four hundred and ninety-four.
<i>Mi par mille ánni di rivedére la mia pátria,⁴</i>	I am impatient to see my country again.
<i>Égli non sa nemméno che dúe vía dúe fan quáttro,</i>	He does not even know that twice two make four.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

The numeral adjectives* are divided into cardinal and ordinal.

I. — CARDINAL NUMBERS.

<i>Úno,</i>	one.	<i>Cinque,</i>	five.
<i>Dúe,</i>	two.	<i>Séi,</i>	six.
<i>Tre,</i>	three.	<i>Sétte,</i>	seven.
<i>Quáttro,</i>	four.	<i>Ótto,</i>	eight.

* Numbers may be divided into cardinal, ordinal, collective, distributive, and proportional.

<i>Nove,</i>	nine.	<i>Cinquánta,</i>	fifty.
<i>Dieci,</i>	ten.	<i>Sessánta,</i>	sixty.
<i>Undici,</i>	eleven.	<i>Settánta,</i>	seventy.
<i>Dódicì,</i>	twelve.	<i>Ottánta,</i>	eighty.
<i>Trédici,</i>	thirteen.	<i>Novánta,</i>	ninety.
<i>Quattórdici,</i>	fourteen.	<i>Cénto,†</i>	hundred.
<i>Quíndici,</i>	fifteen.	<i>Duecénto,</i>	} two hundred.
<i>Sédici,</i>	sixteen.	<i>Ducénto, or</i>	
<i>Diciassétte,</i>	seventeen.	<i>Dugénto,</i>	
<i>Dicióttó,</i>	eighteen.	<i>Trecénto,</i>	three hundred.
<i>Diciannóve,</i>	nineteen.	<i>Quattrocénto,</i>	four hundred.
<i>Vénti,</i>	twenty.	<i>Mille,†</i>	thousand.
<i>Vent'uno, or</i>	} twenty-one.	<i>Duemíla, or</i>	} two thousand.
<i>Vent'uno,*</i>		<i>Dumíla,</i>	
<i>Ventidue,</i>		<i>Tremíla,</i>	three thousand.
<i>Ventitrè,</i>	twenty-three.	<i>Millecénto, or</i>	} eleven hundred.
<i>Ventiquáttro,</i>	twenty-four.	<i>Mille e cénto,</i>	
<i>Venticínque,</i>	twenty-five.	<i>Diecimíla,</i>	ten thousand.
<i>Ventiséi,</i>	twenty-six.	<i>Centomíla,</i>	hundred thousand.
<i>Ventisétté,</i>	twenty-seven.	<i>Milíone,</i>	million. †
<i>Vent'otto, or</i>	} twenty-eight.		
<i>Ventóttó,</i>			
<i>Ventinóve,</i>	twenty-nine.		
<i>Trénta,</i>	thirty.		
<i>Trent'uno,*</i>	thirty-one.		
<i>Trentóttó,</i>	thirty-eight.		
<i>Quaránta,</i>	forty.		

* When a noun follows the numbers twenty-one, thirty-one, forty-one, etc., it remains in the singular; as, *Vent' uno libro*, twenty-one books. But, when the noun precedes the number, it is put in the plural; as, *Libri trent' uno*.

† The numerals *cénto* and *mille* are never accompanied by the indefinite article as in English, — a hundred, or a thousand. *Cénto* is invariable.

‡ When the numerals are used to indicate the hour of the day, they are preceded by the feminine article *la*, *le*: but then the word *óra*, hour, *óre*, hours, is either expressed or understood; as, *Le due óre*, two o'clock; *le quáttro (óre)*, four o'clock.

ITALIANISMS.

<i>Vérso le sá,</i>	at about six o'clock.	<i>Di due giòrni l' uno,</i>	every other day.
<i>Suóna un' óra,</i>	it has struck one.	<i>Quíndici giòrni fa, or</i>	} a fortnight ago.
<i>È l' una, or è un' óra,</i>	it is one o'clock.	<i>Sóno quíndici giòrni,</i>	
<i>Ad un' óra, or al tòcco,</i>	at one o'clock.	<i>Dománi a quíndici,</i>	to-morrow fortnight.

II. — ORDINAL NUMBERS.

<i>Primo</i>	first.
<i>Secóndo</i>	second.
<i>Térzo</i>	third.
<i>Quárto</i>	fourth.
<i>Quínto</i>	fifth.
<i>Sésto</i>	sixth.
<i>Séttimo</i>	seventh.
<i>Ottávo</i>	eighth.
<i>Nóno</i>	ninth.
<i>Décimo</i>	tenth.
<i>Undécimo, or décimo primo</i>	eleventh.
<i>Duodécimo, or décimo secóndo</i>	twelfth.
<i>Tredécimo, or décimo térzo</i>	thirteenth.
<i>Décimo quártó</i>	fourteenth.
<i>Décimo quánto</i>	fifteenth.
<i>Décimo sésto</i>	sixteenth.
<i>Décimo séttimo</i>	seventeenth.
<i>Décimo ottávo</i>	eighteenth.
<i>Décimo nóno</i>	nineteenth.
<i>Ventésimo, or vigésimo</i>	twentieth.
<i>Ventésimo primo, etc.</i>	twenty-first.
<i>Trentésimo</i>	thirtieth.
<i>Quarantésimo</i>	fortieth.
<i>Cinquantésimo</i>	fiftieth.
<i>Sessantésimo</i>	sixtieth.
<i>Settantésimo</i>	seventieth.
<i>Ottantésimo</i>	eightieth.
<i>Novantésimo</i>	ninetieth.
<i>Centésimo</i>	one hundredth.
<i>Millésimo</i>	one thousandth.

These adjectives agree with their nouns. (See Chapter IX.)

III. Fractional and collective numbers are —

<i>Mézzo,</i>	half.	<i>Ūna dozzína,</i>	a dozen.
<i>Ūna metà,</i>	a half (moiety).	<i>Ūna quindicína,</i>	a fifteenth.
<i>Un térzo,</i>	a third.	<i>Ūna ventína,</i>	a score.
<i>Un quártó,</i>	a fourth.	<i>Un centináio,</i>	a hundred.
<i>Ūna decima,</i>	a ten (half-score).	<i>Un miigliáio,</i>	a thousand.

IV. *Uno*, numeral adjective, like the indefinite article *un*, agrees with its noun; but the final *o* is suppressed, unless the noun begins with *s* followed by another consonant; as, *Un gállo*, one or a cock; *un autóre*, one or an author; *úno spíllo*, a pin. The feminine is *úna*; as, *Úna dónna*, a woman. We write *un'* before a feminine noun beginning with a vowel; as, *Un' ánitra*, a duck.

V. There are a great many phrases in Italian in which the noun after *úno* is suppressed; as, *È úno che díce mále di tútti*, he is a man (one) who speaks ill of everybody.

VI. On the contrary, *úno* is often suppressed before nouns which express an indefinite sense; as, *È uómo di buóna fama*, he is a man of good repute.

VII. *Per úno* signifies per head; as, *Il pránzo ci è costáto cinque fránchi per úno*, the dinner cost us five francs per head.

VIII. The expression *in un*, often employed by the poets, is an abridgment, signifying *in un sólo mómento*, *in un medésimo témpo*, in a single moment, in an even time; and the expression *ad úna vóce*, signifies *unanimously*.

IX. To translate "one by one," "two by two," "three by three," etc., the preposition is repeated; and we say, *ad úno ad úno*, *a dúe a dúe*, *a tre a tre*. "Both," "all three," etc., are translated *tútti e dúe*, *tútti e tre*.

X. "Firstly" and "secondly" are expressed by *primieraménte*, *secondariaménte*: afterwards we say, *in térzo luógo*, *in quáрто luógo*, for "in the third place," "in the fourth place," etc.

XI. In multiplication, *vía* expresses *times*; as, Twice or two times two are four, *dúe vía dúe fan quáttro*; or, by abbreviation, *dúe vía díc quáttro*.

XII. In dating letters, the article may be used either in the singular or plural; as, *The 21st May, li 21 Maggio*, or *ai 21 di Maggio*, or *il 21° Maggio*, etc.

XIII. In speaking of years,* in Italian we use *in the*; as, *Nel 1500, nel 1862*.

XIV. For the knowledge of epochs, it is important to know that the Italians sometimes call the thirteenth century *il 200*, because it goes from 1200 to 1299; and, for the same reason, they say *il 300, il 400, il 500*, etc., for the fourteenth, fifteenth, sixteenth centuries: hence the words *un trecentista, cinquecentista, un seicentista*, etc., for "an author of the fourteenth, sixteenth, seventeenth centuries." Generally, however, they say, as in English, *il décimo terzo século, il décimo nono século*, the thirteenth century, the nineteenth century.

XV. "Both" is translated by *ámbo* or *ambedúe*; as, *Ámbo i piédi, ámbe le gámbe, ambedúe le faméglie*, Both feet, both legs, both families.

XVI. In speaking of sovereigns, the ordinal number is used, as in English; as, *Enríco quáрто*, Henry the Fourth; *Gregório décimo sesto*, Gregory the Sixteenth.

READING LESSON.

Ludóvico Ariósto nácque addì ótto di. Settémbré, dell' áнно mílle quattrocénto settánta quáttro.

Dánte nácque in Firénze nel Márzo dell' áнно mílle ducénto sessánta cinque da Alighiéro e da Bélla. Il súo primiéro nóme di Duránte fu cangiáto per vézzo in quéllo di Dánte. Nell' áнно mílle trecénto ventúno, nel mése di Settémbré, morì il gránde e valénte poéta Dánte Alighiéri nélla città di Ravénna.

Petrárca nácque addì vénti di Lúglio nell' áнно mílle trecénto quáttro nélla città d'Arézzo. Morì d'apopllessía nélla nótte del dicióttó di Lúglio dell' áнно mílle trecénto settánta tre.

* I am twenty, thirty, fifty years old, cannot be rendered literally; but is expressed thus: I have twenty, thirty, fifty years, *Io ho vinti' anni, trent' anni, cinquanti' anni*.

Torquáto Tásso nácque in Sorrénto ágli úndici Márzo dell' áno mílle cinquecénto quaránta quáttro. Spirò ai venticínque d'Apríle mílle cinquecénto novánta cínque.

Giovánni Boccáccio nácque nell' áno 1313; e morì addì 21 di Dicémbre, 1374.

Machiavéllo vénne álla lúce in Firénze ai 3 di Mággio dell' áno 1467, e morì ai 22 di Giúgno 1527.

Leonárdo Salviati il piú illústre grammático di Firénze víde il giórno nel 1540.

Leonárdo da Vínzi nácque nel 1452.

Michelágnolo Buonarróti ébbe víta nel 1475; e morì in età di quási 89 ánni.

Benvenúto Cellíni vénne al móndo il dì d' ognissánti 1500.

Nácque il Galiléo nel 1564, néllo stésso giórno e quási álla stésa óra, in cú morì Michelángelo.

Francésco Soáve, autóre délle "Novélle Moráli," víde la lúce nel 1743 e morì in età di 63.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. It is more difficult to make five francs with six sous than to gain a million with ten thousand francs.

2. An inhabitant of Padua invented paper in the twelfth century, and a Florentine invented spectacles at the commencement of the fourteenth.

3. Man has commonly but twenty-two years to live: during these twenty-two years, he is subject to twenty-two sicknesses, of which many are incurable. In this horrible state, man still struts: he loves (makes love), he wars (makes war), he forms projects, as if he would live a thousand centuries in his delights.

4. A regimen to be followed by every man who wishes to live a hundred years: first repast, — a glass of pure water at nine o'clock in the morning; second repast, — soup, roast meat, stewed fruit, a glass of old wine, at two o'clock in the afternoon; third repast, — a walk, without fatigue, at four o'clock; fourth repast, — a glass of sugared water at nine o'clock at night, on going to bed.

5. A very brave soldier had lost both his arms in battle. His colonel offered him a crown. "You think, without doubt," said the grenadier, with vivacity, "that I have lost only a pair of gloves."

VOCABULARY.

1. Sou, *sólido*; franc, *fránco*.
2. Padua, *Pádova*; Florentine, *Fiorentíno*; at the commencement, *nel principío*.
3. During these, *nel decórso di quésti*; is subject, *va soggéto*; ought, *dovésse*.
4. To follow by every one who would wish, *da tenérsi da chiúnque vorrà*; stewed fruits, *consérva*; afternoon, *dópo mézzo-giórno*; walk, *passaggiáta*; fatigue, *stancáre*; sugared, *zuccheráto*; going to bed, *nell' andáre a létto*.
5. Lost, *perduto*; offered him, *offerse*; you think, *credéte*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <i>Quánti ánni avéte?</i> | <i>Adésso (now) ho trént'óttó ánni.</i> |
| <i>E vóstro fratéllo?</i> | <i>Dicióttó ánni.</i> |
| <i>Avéte danáro nélia vóstra tásca?</i> | <i>Sì, ho cénto cinquánta scúdi.</i> |
| <i>In che clásse è Luígi?</i> | <i>È nélia secónda clásse.</i> |
| <i>In che áнно nácque Galiléo?</i> | <i>Nel 1564.</i> |
| <i>Quánti ánni visse Adámo?</i> | <i>Ègli visse nóve cénto trénta.</i> |
| <i>Che óra è?</i> | <i>È un quártó dópo mezzodì.</i> |
| <i>A che óra pranziámo óggi?</i> | <i>Pranzerémmo álle due.</i> |
| <i>Quánti ne abbíámo del mése?</i> | <i>Ne abbíámo venticínque.</i> |
| <i>Quánti ócchi hái?</i> | <i>Dúe.</i> |
| <i>Quánte díta (fingers) abbíámo a ciascúna máno?</i> | <i>Ne abbíámo cínque.</i> |
| <i>E le díta dei piédi (feet) quánte sóno?</i> | <i>Diéci.</i> |
| <i>E le díta delle máni e dei piédi quánte sóno?</i> | <i>Sóno vénti.</i> |
| <i>Quánti abitánti ha la città di Lóndra?</i> | <i>Lóndra ha tre millióni d'abitánti.</i> |
| <i>Che età ha il Signór S——?</i> | <i>È nel súo sessantésimo secóndo áнно.</i> |
| <i>Quánti sénsi avéte?</i> | <i>Cínque: udíto, vísta, odoráto, gusto, táto.</i> |
| <i>Quándo morì Napoleón?</i> | <i>Nel mággio del mílle ottocénto ventuno.</i> |
| <i>In che pòsso servírvi?</i> | <i>Nel prestármi cinquemíla fránchi.</i> |

CHAPTER XIV.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Chi è che batte? or chi batte?</i>	Who knocks?
<i>Chi è? Chi chiama?</i>	Who is it? Who calls?
<i>Che cosa è successo?</i>	What has happened?
<i>Che nuove abbiamo?</i>	What news have we?
<i>Sapete voi chi sono?</i>	Do you know who I am?
<i>Che razza di pensare?</i>	What manner of thinking?
<i>Non so che dire, davvero,</i>	Truly, I know not what to say.
<i>Che male vi ho fatto io?</i>	What harm have I done you?
<i>Che giorno è oggi?</i>	What day is it to-day?
<i>Di chi è la colpa?</i>	Whose fault is it?
<i>Che età avete?</i>	How old are you?
<i>Che cosa avete contro a fare?</i>	What are you going to do?
<i>Che vale avere ricchezze senza salute?</i>	What are riches worth without health?
<i>Che bella cosa è il girare il mondo!</i>	What a pleasure to travel over the world!
<i>Che cosa mi darete da mangiare?</i>	What will you give me to eat?
<i>Qual è la minestra che più vi piace?</i>	What soup do you like best?
<i>Che cosa sento? che cosa vedo?</i>	What do I hear? what do I see?
<i>Che cosa fate di bello, amico?</i>	What good thing are you doing, friend?
<i>Che? Come? Che dite?</i>	What? How? What did you say?
<i>In qual concetto mai mi tenete?</i>	What opinion have you, then, of me?
<i>Sapete qual sia l'animo suo?</i>	Do you know what is his intention?
<i>Quanti pazzi vi sono nel mondo!</i>	How many fools there are in the world!
<i>È un uomo cui niuno piace,</i>	He is a man whom no one pleases.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

I. These pronouns are *chi*, *che*, *quale*, *cui*, who, which, what.*

II. "Who," *chi*, when it has no antecedent expressed as, —

Who loves, fears,	<i>Chi ama, teme.</i>
Of whom do you speak?	<i>Di chi parlate?</i>
See who knocks,	<i>Guardate chi picchia.</i>

III. "He who," "some one who," "no one who," "those who," or "the one," "the other," may be translated by *chi*, whenever they do not relate to an antecedent as, —

Distrust those who flatter you,	<i>Diffidatevi di chi vi adula.</i>
Those who live on hope will die of hunger,	<i>Chi vive di speranza morrà fame.</i>
In the world, some are rich, others poor,	<i>Nel mondo, chi è ricco, chi povero.</i>

The word *chi*, when it relates to persons, and represents an individual in the singular, requires the verb of which it is the subject to agree with it in the singular.

IV. "Who," relating to an antecedent expressed, is translated by *che* when it is the subject, and by *cui* when it is the object; ‡ as, —

The woman to whom I speak,	<i>La donna a cui parlo.</i>
The master for whom I labor,	<i>Il padrone § per cui lavoro.</i>
Man is the only animal who weeps and who laughs,	<i>L'uomo è il solo animale piange e che ride.</i>

* *Chi*, *che*, *cui*, who, which, singular and plural; *quale*, who, which, singular; plural.

† *Chi* refers to persons only; *che*, *cui*, *quale*, refer both to persons and things.

‡ *Che* is chiefly used in the nominative; *cui*, in all other relations; *chi*, *quale*, are used in all their relations. *Che*, when it relates to a person, must be translated in English *who* or *whom*; when it relates to a thing, by *which*. In English, the relative pronoun though understood, are often left out after the noun. In Italian, they must always be expressed; as, *Cui si umilia, si esalta*, who humbles himself, etc.; *quasi giovani che voi dicevate*, those young men whom you said; *il cane che vedete*, the dog which you see; *la lettera avete scritta*, the letter you have written; *il ragazzo ch'io ho veduto*, the boy I have seen.

§ The master who teaches is *maestro*; the master who commands is *padrone*.

V. The preposition *a*, to, can be understood before *cúi*; and we may say, *La donna cúi párlo*.

VI. "I who write," "thou who writest," etc., are translated, *Io che scrívo*, *tu che scrívi*, etc. In similar phrases, the verb agrees with the personal pronoun, as in English.

VII. "Which," as the regimen of a verb, is translated by *che* or by *cúi*; as, —

The bread which you eat,	<i>Il páne che mangiáte.</i>
The wall which the house conceals,	<i>Il múro cúi nascónde la casa.</i>

In the last phrase, *cúi* (*nascónde*) is better than *che*, because *che* serves either for subject or object. Petrarch says, *Quélla donna gentíl cúi pídnge amóre*.

VIII. *Che*, or *quále* (*quáli*, *quái*, in the plural), is used in exclamatory phrases; as, —

What a misfortune!	<i>Che disgrázia!</i>
What sin!	<i>Che peccáto!</i>
What beauties!	<i>Quái (or che) bellézze!</i>

IX. *Quále* is used in doubtful phrases, or when followed by a verb; as, Which of these two books do you wish? *quál voléte di quésti dúe líbri?*

X. *Che* is generally used in interrogative phrases; as, —

What book is this?	<i>Che líbro è?</i>
What man is that?	<i>Che uómo è?</i>
What house is that?	<i>Che casa è?</i>
What business have you?	<i>Che affári avéte?</i>

XI. "Which" in the genitive, signifying "of which," "for which," is rendered in Italian by *di cúi*, or *del quále*, etc.; as, It is a favor for which I thank you, *è un favóre di cúi*, or *del quále io vi ringrázio*.

XII. When the noun following *which* designates something belonging to that which precedes it, then *cúi* (whose) is used with the article; as, The hero whose exploits have astonished the world, *l' eróe le cúí gésta hánno fáttö maravigliáre il móndo.*

XIII. The word "which" in the ablative case, signifying "by which," "from which," indicating the origin, the derivation, the point of departure of an action or thing, is rendered in Italian by *da cúí*, or *dal quále*, etc.; as, —

There is no evil from which	<i>Non c' è mále da cúí non náscá</i>
good does not arise,	<i>un béne,</i>
The army by which the city is	<i>L' armáta da cúí è assediáta la</i>
besieged,	<i>città.</i>

XIV. "What," interrogative, is translated by *che* or *che cósa*; as, —

Upon what shall we dine?	<i>Con che pranzerémo?</i>
What is the use of merit without fortune?	<i>A che giòva il mérito sénza fortuna?</i>

XV. "To which," relating to an entire phrase, is translated by *al che*; relating to a single word, by *a cúí*, or *al quále*, or *álía quále*; as, —

To which I answered,	<i>Al che rispósi.</i>
That of which the miser thinks the least is to succor the poor,	<i>La cósa a cúí méno pénsa l' aváro, è il sovveníre i míseri.</i>

XVI. We translate such phrases as the following, thus: —

What are politics?	<i>Che cósa è, or cos' è la política?</i>
What do you say?	<i>Che cósa díte? che díte?</i>
What is it?	<i>Che cos' è?</i>
What is there?	<i>Che cósa c' è? che c' è?</i>
What do I hear?	<i>Che cósa sénto? che sénto?</i>
What are you doing?	<i>Che cósa fáte? che fáte?</i>
Who is going?	<i>Chi párté?</i>
In what manner?	<i>In che módo? in quál módo?</i>

OBSERVATIONS.

XVII. The word *onde* is often used in Italian poetry in lieu of *di cúi*, or *del quále*, *dal quále*, either in the singular or plural, masculine or feminine; as, *Di quéi sospíri ond' io nudriva il córe* (Petrárca), those sighs with which I nourished my heart. In this line the word *onde* is in place of *cói quáli*, with which.

XVIII. In poetry particularly, the word *che*, relative, is sometimes employed as an indirect object, in place of *cúi* or *quáli*; as, *Gli ócchi di ch' io parlái si caldamente* (Petrárca), the eyes of which I spoke so warmly. Here the word *che* is in place of *di cúi*.

XIX. In using *che* as an indirect object, the Italian authors sometimes omit the preposition which ought to precede it, and which is the sign of the regimen; as, *Ed io sòn un di quéi che 'l piànger giòva* (Petrárca), and I am one of those to whom weeping helps. Here the preposition *a* (to) before *che* is understood.

XX. It often happens that *che* is used in Italian in place of *núlla*, nothing; as, *È un dúro péso il non avér che fáre*, it is a heavy burden to have nothing to do.

XXI. *Non che* is elegantly used for "not only." But, in this case, the *non che* is placed in the second part of the phrase; as in the line from Petrárca, — *Spéro trovár pietà, non che perdóno*, I hope to find, not only pardon, but pity.

XXII. Finally, *che* is often connected with other words; thus forming adverbs and conjunctions at pleasure. In these cases, the final letter is accented, which renders the sound more striking, as in the words *primachè*, *benchè*, *fuorchè*, *perciocchè*, *avvegnachè*, *contuttochè*, etc.

XXIII. In the subjunctive mood of the verb, *che* is understood; as, *Voglio mi diciáte*, I wish that you would say it to me.

READING LESSON.

I Románi avéndo scélti per mandáre in Bitínia tre ambascia-
chosen to send
 tóri, úno déi quáli patíva di podágra, l' áltro éra státo trapánato
suffered trapped
 e l' último éra tenúto per uómo scémpio, Catóne disse ridéndo,
laughing
 che i Románi mandávano un' ambasceria che non avéva nè
sent neither
 piédi, nè cápo, nè ménte. Dío ci día buóni príncipi, perchè,
nor May God send us
 úna vólta che s' hánno, è fórza soffrírli táli quáli sóno. L'
to bear with them
 egoísta è un uómo che appiccherébbe fuóco ad úna cása per far
would set to make
 cuócere un uóvo. Ógni língua è piacévole all' orécchio del
to cook
 pópolo per cúì è fáta. Ciceróne fu assassináto da Popélio Léna,
made.
 a cúì avéva già salváto la víta in úna cása in cúì éra accusáto
saved
 d' áver uccíso il próprio pádre. Síbari éra úna città délla
killed
 Mágna Grécia, i cúì abítanti érano móltó dátí all' effeminatézza;
given
 dónde viéne il nóme di sibaríta per dinotáre un uómo effemináto.
comes denote

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. I have seen this Italy which Corinne calls "the empire of the sun." What a fertile soil! What a delightful climate! What superb cities! What noble antiquities! What more sublime than the genius of the man who emulates nature, and erects eternal monuments everywhere (in all parts)!

2. Who can love repose before having experienced the pain of weariness? Who is he that finds pleasure in eating, drinking, and sleeping, before having suffered from hunger, thirst, and sleepiness?

3. "I have three sorts of friends," said Voltaire; "the friends who love me, the friends to whom I am indifferent, and the friends who detest me."

4. It is a very glorious thing for Italy, that the three powers between whom almost all America was divided, owed their first conquests to the Italians: the Spaniards, to Christopher Columbus; the English, to the two Cabots of Venice; and the French, to Florentine Verazzani.

VOCABULARY.

1. Calls, *chiàma*; what, *che àltro v' ha*; genius, *ingégno*; erects, *innàlza*; in all parts, *da ógni pàrte*.

2. Can love, *può àver càro*; before, etc., *se prima non ha sentíto*.

3. Detest, *detéstono*.

4. Divided, *divíso*; almost, *quási*; owed, *dovesséro*; their first conquests, *le prime lóro conquiste*; *Spagnuóli*; *Cristóforo Colómbó*; *Inglési*; *Cabótti*; *Veneziáni*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Che avete vedúto?

Come è élla chiamáta?

E del clíma che díte?

E che? Siéte vói?

Che cercáte?

Dov' éra?

Che dicéva Voltáire déi suói amíci?

Quál differénza v' è fra óggi e iéri?

A chi piáce úna língua qual-únque?

Che si (one) díce délle città d' Itàlia?

Che abbíamo per pránzo?

*Che dísse Catóne déi tre ambas-
ciatóri mandáti in Bitínia?*

*Cósa è assái glorióso per l' Ità-
lia?*

Ho vedúto la bella Itàlia.

E chiamáta l' impéro del sóle.

Che è delizióso!

Io, in persóna.

Il mio líbro.

Sóptra la távola.

*Egli dicéva, "io ho tre spécie
d' amíci."*

Óggi non è tánto cáldo.

Al pópolo per cúí è fátta.

Che són supérbe.

*Avrémo (we shall have) uóva e
frútti.*

*Che éra un' ambascería che non
avéva nè piédi, nè cápo, nè
ménte.*

*Che le poténza d' Európa déb-
bono ágí Italiáni le lóro
prime conquiste in América.*

CHAPTER XV.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Che intenzione è la vostra?</i>	What is your intention?
<i>Voglio la roba mia,</i>	I wish my property.
<i>Partiréte con vostro comodo,</i>	You will depart at your ease.
<i>Mio padre ha da vivere,</i>	My father has property.
<i>Egli è un po' scarso del suo,</i>	He is a little short of money.
<i>Andátemi lontano dagli occhi,</i>	Go far from my sight.
<i>Ho gettato via il mio danaro,</i>	I have thrown my money away.
<i>Non ho danari in tasca,</i>	I have no money in my pocket.
<i>Ho qualche cosetta del mio,</i>	I possess something.
<i>Vi son servo,</i>	I am your servant.
<i>So che mi siete amico,</i>	I know that you are my friend.
<i>Ogni mia cosa è vostra,</i>	All I have is yours.
<i>Andatevi in mia vece,</i>	Go in my stead.
<i>Io attendo ai fatti miei,</i>	I attend to my affairs.
<i>Voglio far a modo mio,</i>	I wish to do as I please.
<i>Egli ha posto in sicuro la vita,</i>	He has put his life in security.
<i>Voi siete del mio parere,</i>	You are of my opinion.
<i>Sentiamo il suo parere,</i>	Let us listen to his advice.
<i>Io aspetterò il vostro padrone,</i>	I expect your master.
<i>Ognuno vuol bene ai suoi,</i>	Every one loves his own.
<i>Io non ci voglio andar di mezzo</i> <i>per causa vostra,</i>	I do not wish to be compro- mised on your account.
<i>Vi ringrazio di tante vostre</i> <i>bontà,</i>	I thank you for so much kind- ness.
<i>Oggidi, metterò il mio bel vesti-</i> <i>to,</i>	To-day I shall put on my best coat.
<i>Se siete cieco, vostro danno,</i>	If you are blind, so much the worse for you.
<i>Che vi dice il cuore di tutto ciò?</i>	What says your heart to all that?
<i>Ognuno amar dee la patria,</i>	Every man should love his country.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

I. The possessive pronouns* are —

<i>Mio,</i>	<i>mía,</i>	my or mine.
<i>Tuo,</i>	<i>túa,</i>	thy or thine.
<i>Suo,</i>	<i>súa,</i>	his, her or hers, its.
<i>Nóstro,</i>	<i>nóstra,</i>	our or ours.
<i>Vóstro,</i>	<i>vóstra,</i>	your or yours.
<i>Lóro,</i>	<i>lóro,</i>	their or theirs.

Mio, tuo, suo, nóstro, vóstro, are masculine; and are changed in the plural into —

<i>Miei,</i>	my or mine.
<i>Tuoi,</i>	thy or thine.
<i>Suoi,</i>	his, her or hers, its.
<i>Nóstri,</i>	our or ours.
<i>Vóstri,</i>	your or yours.

Mía, túa, súa, nóstra, vóstra, are feminine; and form their plural thus: —

<i>Mie,</i>	my or mine.
<i>Túe,</i>	thy or thine.
<i>Súe,</i>	his, her or hers, its.
<i>Nóstre,</i>	our or ours.
<i>Vóstre,</i>	your or yours.

II. *Lóro*, their or theirs, is of both genders, and of both numbers, and takes the article agreeing with the noun to which it belongs.

III. Possessive pronouns are generally varied with the prepositions and articles.

* REMARK. — Galignani divides the possessive pronouns into three classes; viz., conjunctive, disjunctive, and relative.

The conjunctive are those which are united to nouns; as, *Il mio libro*, my book; *i miei parenti*, my relations.

The disjunctive are those which are not united to nouns; as, *La vostra casa, e la mia*, your house and mine; *i miei cavalli, e i vostri*, my horses and yours. *La mia* and *vostri* are disjunctive, as they stand in place of the noun.

The relative are those which have relation to a person or a thing already spoken of; as, *È mio* or *mia*, it is mine; *sono tuoi* or *túe*, they are thine.

Variation of a masculine possessive pronoun : —

SINGULAR.

Subjective	<i>Il mio,</i>	my or mine.
Relation of Possession .	<i>Del mio,</i>	of my or mine.
„ „ Attribution .	<i>Al mio,</i>	to my or mine.
„ „ Derivation .	<i>Dal mio,</i>	from or by my or mine.
Objective	<i>It mio,</i>	my or mine, etc.

IV. *Mio, tuo, suo, nostro, vostro, and loro* are sometimes used with the article substantively, — *il mio, il tuo, suo, etc.* In this case, the word *avere*, property, is understood ; and the pronouns are equivalent to “my property,” “thy property,” etc. ; as, —

Mangi del suo, Let him eat of his own [property].
Non mangerà del nostro, He will not eat of ours.

V. *Miei, tuoi, nostri, and loro*, are also used substantively, — *i miei, i tuoi, i suoi, i nostri, i loro*. Then the word *parenti*, relations, *amici*, friends, *compagni*, companions, *familiari*, domestics, *soldati*, soldiers, or *seguidi*, followers, is understood ; and these pronouns are equivalent to “my relations,” “thy friends,” “his companions,” “our domestics,” “your soldiers,” “their followers ;” as, —

Incóntra á miei, Against my relations.
Pregato da' suoi, Requested by his friends.

VI. To avoid the ambiguity which in many instances would arise, in Italian,* from the indiscriminate use of

* REMARK. — The English language, for want of a sufficient variety of personal pronouns of the third person and their possessives, often labors under an ambiguity which is unknown in Italian. Observe the example, “He sent him to kill his own father.” Nothing but the sense of that which precedes can determine whose father is meant ; whereas, in Italian, the pronouns *sua* and *di lui* mark the sense.

OBSERVATION. — *Proprio* adds emphasis to the possessive pronoun, as *own* in English : it is considered by some grammarians a real possessive pronoun.

In Italian, the possessive pronoun agrees in gender and number with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor as in English ; as, —

POSSESSOR (sing.). POSSESSED OBJECT (f. sing.).

Il padre ama (loves) sua figlia (his daughter).

La madre ama (loves) sua figlia (her daughter).

the possessive pronouns *suo, sua, suoi, sue*, when these pronouns do not relate to the subject of the proposition, they are changed for the personal pronouns *di lui, di lei*, of him, of her: Thus, in the phrase "John loves Peter and his children," if the pronoun "his" relates to "John," the subject of the proposition, it is expressed by *i suoi*; as, *Giovanni ama Pietro ed i suoi figliuoli*, John loves Peter and his [John's] children; but if "his" does not relate to "John," but to "Peter," the object of the proposition, then it is expressed by *i di lui*; as, *Giovanni ama Pietro ed i di lui figliuoli*, John loves Peter and his [Peter's] children.

<i>Mandò ad uccidere suo padre,</i>	He sent to kill his father [the father of him who sent].
<i>Sua sorella e i figli di lei,</i>	Her sister and her children [the children of her sister].

VII. The article is used, first, when titles, or the names of relationship, are in the plural; as, My brothers, *i miei fratelli*; your majesties, *le vostre Maestà*: second, when the possessive is placed after them; as, *Il fratello mio, la Maestà sua*: third, when they are accompanied by another adjective; as, *Il mio caro padre, or il caro padre mio*, my dear father: fourth, when the name of the relation is a diminutive; as, My little sister, *la mia sorellina, or la sorellina mia*.

VIII. There are a number of expressions where the possessive pronoun does not receive an article; as, *È mio parere, a suo senno, di sua testa*, etc., it is my advice, at his pleasure, of his head. Such phrases are easily learned by practice.

IX. Politeness requires the Italians to say, *Il vostro Signór padre, la vostra Signóra zia*, your father, your aunt, etc.

X. To translate "it is one of my cousins," "there are three of our domestics," "there are many of our friends," the Italians say, without the article, *È un mio cugino*,

sóno tre nóstri servitóri, sóno parécchi nóstri amíci, or è un déi miéi cugini, son tre déi nóstri servitóri, sóno parécchi dei nóstri amíci. The same is the case in such phrases as, *It is my fault, è un mio erróre.*

XI. To translate "these are my children," "these are my sisters," "these are my parents," etc., we say, *Sóno miéi figli, sóno mie sorélle, sóno miéi parénti.*

XII. The possessive forms an Italianism in many phrases ; as, —

Mio danno,

So much the worse for me.

Ógni mio pensière,

My every thought.

XIII. The possessive pronouns, referring to parts of the body or dress, are rendered by the pronouns *mi, ti, si, gli, ci,* and *vi,* particularly when they follow the verb.

Take off your hat,

Levátevi il cappéllo.

We shall put it in our pocket,

Ce lo metterémo in tásca.

He put it upon his knees,

Se lo póse sülle ginócchia.

I put it upon his head,

Io gliélo pósi in capo.

XIV. We say in the same manner, —

He is not my father,

Égli non mi è pádre.

I am not his friend,

Io non gli sóno amico.

Remember that he is thy son,

Ricórdati ch' égli ti è figlio.

Call my domestic,

Chiamátemi il camerière.

READING LESSON.

IL CAVÁLLO RUBÁTO.

STOLEN.

Il piú bel cavállo d'un contadino vénne di nótte rubáto nella
came

súa stállo. Alcúni giòrni dópo il paesáno si recò al mercáto de'
went

cavállì che si ténne nella città vicína, per comprárne un áltro.
one held to buy

Quále fu la súa sorprésa allorchè tra i cavállo in vèndita égli
when sale

riconóbbe il sùo. Súbito lo prése per la brìglia, sclamándo :
recognized Immediately took bridle

“ Quèsto cavállo è mío. Sóno tre giòrni che mi fu rubáto. ” —

“ Vói v' ingannáte, galantuómo, ” rispóse tranquillaménte il
You deceive, gentleman, replied

padróne del cavállo, “ è più d'un ánno che quèsto cavállo mi
 appartiéne ; dúnque non è il vóstro : può éssere, però, che gli
belongs; then it may be

rassomígli qualche póco.”
resembles

Il contadíno copérse súbito gli ócchi del cavállo cólle sùe mání,
covered quickly

e disse : “ Ebbéne, se l' animále vi appartiéne da tánto témpo,
said: Well, if to you

dítemi un póco, di qual ócchio égli è ciéco? ”
tell me

L' áltro, il quále infátti avéva rubáto il cavállo sénza esami-
in fact examin-

nárlo da préssso, rimáse sbigottíto un moménto. Dovéndo
ing him closely, remained frightened Having

però díre qualche cósa, égli rispóse all' avventúra : “ Dell'
however to say at a venture:

óocchio sinístro ! ”
left!

“ V' ingannáte, ” rispóse il contadíno, “ il cavállo non è ciéco
 dell' óocchio sinístro ! ” — “ Eh ! ” sclamò il fúrbo, “ ho fáto úno
rogue

sbáglio di língua ; il cavállo è ciéco dell' óocchio déstro. ”
slip right.

Allóra il contadíno scopérse gli ócchi del cavállo e disse : “ È
Then uncovered

evidénte óra che séi ládro e bugiárdo. Guardáte tútti ! Il
now thou art thief liar. Look all!

cavállo non è ciéco nè póco nè púnto. Gli ho fáto le dománde
(not at all.) To him made

soltáto per iscopríre il fúrto.”
only discover theft.

Tutti gli astanti si misero a ridere ed a battere le mani,
 bystanders put laugh clap
 gridando: "È colto, il furbo, è colto."
 crying: caught

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. If the best man was obliged to wear his faults written on his forehead, he would never dare to raise his hat.

2. A woman of Sparta said to her son, who had returned lame from battle, "At every step which you take, you will now remember your valor and your glory."

3. A man, who had dissipated his property, complained of the injury the hail had caused to his farms. A person, who knew the boaster well, said, "It is your own fault; for, if you had had the precaution to open your umbrella when it hailed, your farms would not have been injured."

4. The great Condé — tired of hearing a certain fop continually speak of monsieur, his father; madam, his mother; misses, his sisters — called one of his servants, and said to him, "Mister, my lackey, tell mister my coachman to harness messrs. my horses to madam my carriage."

5. A superstitious prince once dreamed that he saw three mice, — a fat one, a poor one, and a blind one. The prince consulted a sibyl, who said to him, "My prince, the fat mouse is your minister, the poor mouse is your people, and the blind mouse is your portrait."

VOCABULARY.

1. If he was obliged, *se dovesse*; written, *scritti*; upon, *in*; to dare, *ardire*.

2. Of Sparta, *Spartana*; return from, *tornare da*; at every step, *ad ogni passo*; you will remember, *rammenterete*.

3. A man (a spendthrift), *uno spiantato*; complained, *lagnarsi*; caused, *fatto*; farms, *podere*; boaster, *millantatore*; it is your own fault, *la colpa è vostra*; it hailed, *si mise a grandinare*; injured, *danneggiati*.

4. Tired of hearing, *annojato d'intendere*; fop, *sciocco vanarello*; Miss, *Signorina*; called, *chiamava*; lackey, *staffiere*; tell, *dite*; harness, *attaccare*.

5. Once, *una volta*; that he saw, *che vide*; consulted, *consultò*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

<i>Chi è questa donna?</i>	<i>Una certa mia amica.</i>
<i>Dov' è il di lei ritratto (picture)?</i>	<i>Io lo posi nella sua camera.</i>
<i>Chi avete veduto?</i>	<i>Ho veduto la sorellina vostra.</i>
<i>A chi scrivete (write) voi?</i>	<i>Alla mia cara figlia.</i>
<i>Di chi è questo cavallo?</i>	<i>Del mio staffiere.</i>
<i>Come viaggia il Conte?</i>	<i>Colla propria carrozza.</i>
<i>Maria dorme ancora?</i>	<i>Non dorme, no.</i>
<i>Perchè tiene ella gli occhi chiusi?</i>	<i>Tien (she keeps) gli occhi chiusi (closed) per celia (sport).</i>
<i>Si dice che il Signor E., è morto, ha fatto un testamento?</i>	<i>Sì, ha fatto di gran lasciati allo spedale; resta però al figlio un bel patrimonio.</i>
<i>Avete veduto le mie sorelle?</i>	<i>No Signóre, ho veduto solamente (only) vostro fratello.</i>
<i>Che volete da me?</i>	<i>Non voglio (wish) niente (nothing) da voi.</i>
<i>Signor Maestro, desidererei (I should like) di avere da lei qualche lezione di ballo,</i>	<i>Sono pronto a servirla.</i>

CHAPTER XVI.

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Servo di questi, Signori,</i>	<i>Your servant, gentlemen.</i>
<i>E capitato quest'oggi,</i>	<i>He has arrived to-day.</i>
<i>Dite quanto vi pare,</i>	<i>Say all that you please.</i>
<i>Che maniere son queste?</i>	<i>What manners are these?</i>
<i>Non è tutt'oro quel che lucca,</i>	<i>All is not gold that glitters.</i>
<i>Comprate questo mio cavallo,</i>	<i>Buy my horse.</i>
<i>Questo panno è troppo caro,</i>	<i>This cloth is too dear.</i>
<i>Il mio debole parere è questo,</i>	<i>That is my weak advice.</i>
<i>Che vuol dir questo?</i>	<i>What does this mean?</i>
<i>Questo si sa da tutti,</i>	<i>Everybody knows that.</i>

<i>È un seccatóre costui,</i>	This man is importunate.
<i>Mandáte via colóro,</i>	Send those people away.
<i>Scuotétevi da cotésta tristezza,</i>	Shake off this sadness.
<i>Quésto è quánto mi disse,</i>	This is all he said to me.
<i>Chi è costui?</i>	Who is he?
<i>L' uómo ascólta volentiéri quel</i>	A man willingly listens to what
<i>che gli piáce,</i>	pleases him.
<i>Quésto è quéllo che più di tutto</i>	This is what afflicts me the
<i>m' affligge,</i>	most.
<i>Mi renderéte ragióne di cotésti</i>	You shall account for having
<i>ingánni,</i>	thus deceived me.
<i>Quánti vivono in quésto móndo</i>	How many people in this world
<i>álle spése di quésto e di quél-</i>	live at the expense of this
<i>lo!</i>	one and that!
<i>Non mi parláte più di colui,</i>	Speak no more to me of this
	man.
<i>Costui v' ingannerà di céрто,</i>	This man will certainly cheat
	you.
<i>Staséra vi aspetterò a cása,</i>	This evening I shall expect
	you.
<i>Maladétta sia quésta mía curi-</i>	Cursed be my curiosity!
<i>osità!</i>	
<i>Quésta cása non è più vóstra,</i>	This house no longer belongs
	to you.

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

I. *Quésto* and *quésta*, with their plurals *quésti* and *quéste*, signify *this* and *these*, or *this here* and *these here*, and indicate an object near to the person who speaks.

Cotésto, *cotésta*, with their plurals *cotésti*, *cotéste*, this, these, are used to point out an object near the person to whom we speak.

Quéllo, *quéllo*, with their plurals *quélle*, *quélle*, that, those, that there, those there, indicate an object distant from the person who speaks; * as, —

* In English, we use the personal pronoun before the relative "who," "whom," or "that;" and, in Italian, we use the demonstrative instead; as, *Quella che mi piace tanto*, she whom I so much admired; *colui che accutava pelle strade*, he that begged in the streets. *Quésto*, *cotésto*, *quéllo*, are frequently represented by *ciò*; as, *Ciò è vero*, that is true.

Take this book, and give me that,	<i>Pigliáte quéstó libro, e dátemi quéllo,</i>
I see that thief who has stolen from me,	<i>Védo quél ládro che m'ha rubáto.</i>
This dress becomes you very well,	<i>Cotéstó vestito vi sta benóne.</i>
I prefer this room to that,	<i>Preferísco quéstá cámera a quéllo.</i>

II. *Quéstó* refers to the object last named in a phrase, and *quéllo* to that first mentioned; as, —

Riches and poverty are alike injurious: the former creates too many wants; the latter hardly permits the knowledge of them,	<i>La richézza e la povertà son del pári nocévoli: quéllo fa nascere tróppi bisógni; quéstá non permétte di conoscérne quási alcuno.</i>
---	--

III. "In the mean while," "during this time," is expressed by *in quéstó méntre*, *in quéstó mézzo*, or, abridged, *in quéstó*, *in quéstá*; and in the same sense, but referring to a more distant epoch, the Italians say, *in quél mézzo*, *in quél méntre*, or *in quéllo*.

IV. "That which" is translated by *ciò che* or *quél che*; as, —

He will do what (that which) I tell him,	<i>Égli farà quél che gli dirò io or ciò che gli dirò io.</i>
All that (that which) pleases the eyes pleases the heart,	<i>Tutto ciò che piáce, or quánto piáce agli ócchi, piáce al cuore.</i>

V. The demonstrative adjective may be added to the possessive pronoun in Italian; as, *Lasciáte stáre quéstá míá pénna, e scrívete con cotéstá, vóstra*. This, literally translated, signifies, "Leave this pen which is near me, and which belongs to me, and write with that which is near you, and which belongs to you."

VI. Instead of saying *quéstá mattína*, *quéstá séra*, *quéstá nótte*, this morning, this evening, this night, the Italians say, for abbreviation, *stamattína* or *stamáne*, *staséra*, *stanótte*.

VI. *Tále*, such, often replaces the demonstrative pronoun *quésto* or *quéllo*. Thus we can say, *tále considerazióne*, instead of *quésta considerazióne*, provided that the idea has been specified in the anterior phrase.

VIII. Speaking of persons in an absolute sense, the Italians say, —

<i>Costúi</i> , this man here ;	<i>Colúi</i> , that man there.
<i>Costéi</i> , this woman here ;	<i>Coléi</i> , that woman there.
<i>Costóro</i> , these men or women here ;	<i>Colóro</i> , those women there.

In certain cases, the article can be transposed thus : —

<i>Per lo colúi consiglio</i> ,	By the advice of that man.
<i>Per la costúi dappocággine</i> ,	By the stupidity of this man.

Instead of *Pel consiglio di colúi*, *per la dappocággine di costúi*.

IX. *Quésti*, *quégli*, *quéi*, *cotésti*, are also used in speaking of a man; as, *Quésti fu dótto*; *quégli*, *ignoránte*, this man was learned; that, ignorant. These words are used only in the singular, and may likewise be applied to animals and inanimate things personified; as in this quotation from Boccaccio: *Dall' una parte mi tráe l' amóre, e dall' áltra, mi tráe giustíssimo sdégno*; *quégli vuóle ch' io ti perdóni, e quésti vuóle, che cóntro a mia nátura in te incrudelísca*, On one side, love influences me; and, on the other, a just anger: that wishes that I would pardon thee; and this, that I, contrary to my nature, should be cruel to thee.

READING LESSON.

La política di un príncipe è l' árte di conserváre quéllo che ha, o di usurpáre quéllo che non ha.

Diógene un giòrno víde un giovinétto che arrosíva: “ánimo,
youth blushed:
figliuólo mío,” díss' égli, “cotéstó è il colóre délla virtù.”

Non v' è pópolo cólto che créda di cédere ágli áltri in génere
cultivated to cede

di lingua, benchè tútti convéngano nêlle qualità che ne fórmano
 although agree

la perfezióne, il che è un ségno che ognúno ha quél che gli
 básta, ne sênte quél che gli mánca.
 is sufficient feels is wanting.

Un contadíno tagliáva un álbero álla ríva d'un fúme; per
 was cutting margin river
 mála sórte la scúre gli cádde nell' ácqua, ne potè ritrovárla.
 ill luck axe fell could he

Mercúrio gli appárve: "È quéstá la túa scúre, galantuómo?"
 appeared

mostrándogliene úna d' óro. "No, cotéstá scúre non è la mía." —
 showing him

"È fôrse quéstá," porgéndogliene úna d' argénto. "No, cotéstá
 presenting

"non è áncora quélla che mi appartíene." — "È quéstá dúnque?"
 belongs.

mostrándogliene úna di fërro, che éra veraménte quélla che avéa
 iron

perdúta. "Ècco veraménte quélla scúre la cúí pérdita mi afflig-
 ge." — "Préndi quéstá e áncóra le dúe prime che ti ho mostráte;
 take

ricévile in prémió délla túa sincerità. La probità è la miglióre
 receive them honesty

política."
 policy.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. Merit depends on neither titles nor manners: these depend on ourselves; those, on chance.

2. An English banker was accused of having plotted a conspiracy to carry off George III., and conduct him to Philadelphia. "I know very well," said he to the judges, "what a king can make of a banker; but I do not know what a banker can make of a king."

3. A considerable sum of money had been stolen from a lord. He, suspecting that it was one of his domestics, called them all one morning, and said to them, "My friends, the Angel Gabriel appeared to me last night, and told me that the thief should have a parrot's feather on the end of his nose." At these words,

the guilty man immediately put his hand to his nose. "It is you, villain, who have stolen from me!" said the master: "the Angel Gabriel came to tell me of it." In this manner he recovered his money.

4. Lent is never long to him who is obliged to pay at Easter.

VOCABULARY.

1. Depends on, *dipénde da*.

2. Was accused, *vénné accusáto*; plotted, *tramáto*; to carry off, *rapíre*; *Giórgio*; in *Filadélfia*; I know, so; can, *può*; I do not know, *non so*.

3. Considerable, *ragguardévole*; suspecting, *sospettándo*; domestic, *servitóre*; called, *chiamò*; end, *púnta*; guilty, *réo*; put his hand on his nose, *si tócca il náso*; villain, *mariuólo*; recovered, *riébbe*.

4. Is obliged (has) to pay, *ha da pagáre*; Easter, *pásqua*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <i>Che víde Diógene un giòrno?</i> | <i>Un giovinétto che arrosva.</i> |
| <i>Cósa díss' égli?</i> | <i>"Anímo, figliuólo mío."</i> |
| <i>Dóve tagliáva un contadíno un álbero?</i> | <i>Alla ríva d' ún fíume.</i> |
| <i>Avéa égli dúe scúri?</i> | <i>No, non ne avéa che úna.</i> |
| <i>Che gli accádde?</i> | <i>Per mála sórte gli cádde la síua scúre nell' ácqua.</i> |
| <i>La ritrovò?</i> | <i>Non potéva ritrovárla.</i> |
| <i>Chí gli appárve?</i> | <i>Mercurio.</i> |
| <i>Che dísse égli?</i> | <i>"È quéstá la túa?" mostrándogli úna scúre d' óro.</i> |
| <i>Che rispóse il contadíno?</i> | <i>"Nò, cotéstá scúre non è la mía."</i> |
| <i>"Fórse è quéstá d' argénto?"</i> | <i>"No, cotéstá non è ancóra quélla che mi appartíene."</i> |
| <i>"È dúnque quéstá di féro?"</i> | <i>"Veraménte, quéstá è la mía."</i> |
| <i>Che dísse Mercurio allóra?</i> | <i>"La probità è la miglióre política."</i> |
| <i>Qual' è la política di un príncipe?</i> | <i>È l' arte di conserváre quéllo che ha, o di usurpáre quéllo che non ha.</i> |

CHAPTER XVII.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>OGNI rosa ha la sua spina,</i>	<i>Every rose has its thorns.</i>
<i>Andate con TUTTA fretta,</i>	<i>Go with all haste.</i>
<i>La fortuna governa OGNI cosa,</i>	<i>Fortune governs every thing.</i>
<i>Vengo da parte di TUTTI loro,</i>	<i>I come for all of them.</i>
<i>QUALUNQUE fatica merita premio,</i>	<i>Every exertion deserves reward.</i>
<i>La posta parte OGNI dì per l'Italia,</i>	<i>The post leaves every day for Italy.</i>
<i>Mi vi trattenni ALCUNE settimane,</i>	<i>I shall remain there some weeks.</i>
<i>Spendete il tempo in QUALCHE utile occupazione,</i>	<i>Spend your time in some useful occupation.</i>
<i>La morte è il fine di TUTTE le sciagure,</i>	<i>Death is the end of all our misfortunes.</i>
<i>QUALUNQUE siano le mie ragioni,</i>	<i>Whatsoever be my reasons.</i>
<i>Starò in casa per TUTTO quest'oggi,</i>	<i>I shall be at home all day.</i>
<i>TUTTO il male non vien per nuocere,</i>	<i>All ills do not injure.</i>
<i>È pazzia il voler sapere TUTTO,</i>	<i>It is a folly to wish to know (all) every thing.</i>
<i>Lo saprete in TUTT'ALTRA guisa,</i>	<i>You will know it in a very different way.</i>

I. Of indefinite pronouns, the following are used only in the singular, and cannot be put before nouns in the plural number : —

<i>Qualche</i> , m. and f.	some, any.
<i>Ogni</i> ,* m. and f.	all, every.
<i>Chiunque</i> , m. and f.	whoever, whosoever.

* With *ogni* are formed the words *ognidì*, every day; *ognóra*, always; *ognúno*, every one. *Ogni*, before numeral adjectives, as in the phrases, *ogni due m'si*, every two months; *ogni sei pagine*, every six pages; *ogni dieci soldati*, every ten soldiers; and in the word *ognissanti*, the day of All-saints, — is used with nouns in the plural.

<i>Chisivógli</i> , m. and f.	whoever, whosoever.
<i>Chi che</i> , m. and f.	" "
<i>Chicchessía</i> , m. and f.	" "
<i>Che che</i> , m. and f.	whatever, whatsoever.
<i>Checchessía</i> , m. and f.	" "
<i>Qualúnque</i> , m. and f.	whosoever, whatsoever.
<i>Qualsivógli</i> , m. and f.	" "
<i>Qualsisía</i> , m. and f.	" "
<i>Núlla</i> , m. and f.	nothing.
<i>Niénte</i> , m. and f.	"
<i>Úno</i> , m.	<i>úna</i> , f. one.
<i>Un'áltro</i> , m.	<i>un'áltra</i> , f. another.
<i>Qualcúno</i> , m.	<i>qualcúna</i> , f. some, some one, somebody.
<i>Qualchedúno</i> , m.	<i>qualchedúna</i> , f. " " " " " "
<i>Ognúno</i> , m.	<i>ognúna</i> , f. every one, everybody.
<i>Ciascúno</i> , m.	<i>ciascúna</i> , f. " " " "
<i>Ciaschedúno</i> , m.	<i>ciaschedúna</i> , f. " " " "
<i>Verúno</i> , m.	<i>verúna</i> , f. no one, nobody.
<i>Nessúno</i> , m.	<i>nessúna</i> , f. " " "
or <i>Nissúno</i> , m.	<i>nissúna</i> , f. " " "
<i>Neúno</i> , m.	<i>neúna</i> , f. " " "
or <i>Niúno</i> , m.	<i>niúna</i> , f. " " "
<i>Nullo</i> , m.	<i>nulla</i> , f. " " "

II. The following are used in both numbers : —

SINGULAR.

<i>Tále</i> , m. and f.	such.
<i>Cotále</i> , m. and f.	such, such a one.
<i>Alcúno</i> , m.	<i>alcúna</i> , f. some, some one, somebody.
<i>Takúno</i> , m.	<i>talúna</i> , f. " " " "
<i>Cérto</i> , m.	<i>cérta</i> , f. certain.
<i>Stéss</i> , m.	<i>stéssa</i> , f. same.
<i>Medésimo</i> , m.	<i>medésima</i> , f. " "
<i>Áltro</i> , m.	<i>áltra</i> , f. other.
<i>Tutto</i> , m.	<i>tútta</i> , f. all.
<i>Alquánto</i> , m.	<i>alquánta</i> , f. a little, somewhat.
<i>Tánto</i> , m.	<i>tánta</i> , f. so much.
<i>Cotánto</i> , m.	<i>cotánta</i> , f. " "
<i>Altrettánto</i> , m.	<i>altrettánta</i> , f. as much, as much more.
<i>Póco</i> , m.	<i>póca</i> , f. a little, a few.
<i>Mólto</i> , m.	<i>mólta</i> , f. much,
<i>Troppo</i> , m.	<i>tróppa</i> , f. too much.

		PLURAL.
<i>Tàli</i> , m. and f.		such.
<i>Cotàli</i> , m. and f.		such, such ones.
<i>Alcùni</i> , m. <i>alcùne</i> , f.		some, some ones.
<i>Talùni</i> , m. <i>talùne</i> , f.		" " "
<i>Cérti</i> , m. <i>cérte</i> , f.		certain.
<i>Stéssi</i> , m. <i>stésse</i> , f.		same.
<i>Medésimi</i> , m. <i>medésime</i> , f.		"
<i>Àltri</i> , m. <i>àltre</i> , f.		others.
<i>Tutti</i> , m. <i>tutte</i> , f.		all, every one, everybody.
<i>Alquànti</i> , m. <i>alquànte</i> , f.		a few, not many.
<i>Tànti</i> , m. <i>tànte</i> , f.		as many.
<i>Cotànti</i> , m. <i>cotànte</i> , f.		" "
<i>Altrettànti</i> , m. <i>altrettànte</i> , f.		as many, as many more.
<i>Póchi</i> , m. <i>póche</i> , f.		few.
<i>Mólti</i> , m. <i>mólte</i> , f.		many.
<i>Tróppi</i> , m. <i>tróppe</i> , f.		too many.

III. *Chiúnque*, *chisivóglià*, *chi che*, *chicchessta*, *qualcúno*, *qualchedúno*, *ognúno*, *talúno*, are applied to persons only: the others may be applied both to persons and things.

IV. "Every," and the word "all" meaning "every," are translated by *ogni* or *qualúnque*, which are always in the singular, and serve for the masculine and feminine; as, —

Every king, every queen,	<i>Ogni re, ogni regina.</i>
Every merit, every pain,	<i>Ogni mérito, ogni péna.</i>

Or *qualúnque re*, *qualúnque reg na*, *qualúnque mérito*, *qualúnque péna*, etc. We can also say, *ciascúno re*, *ciascúna regina*, etc.; *ciascúno* agreeing in gender with its noun.

V. "All," and "the whole," expressing a collective sense, are rendered by *tutto*, and agree with the noun; as, —

All the people, the whole city,	<i>Tutto il pópolo, tutta la città.</i>
All hearts, all nations,	<i>Tutti i cuori, tutte le nazioni.</i>

The inversion, *il popólo tutto*, *la città tutta*, etc., is much used, and is very pretty.

VI. The Italianisms *tutto quánto*, *tutta quánta*, with their plurals, express collectively all the parts of a whole; as, —

La cása è bruciáta tutta quánta, The entire house is burned.
Oggi vi aspétto a pránzo tutti quánti, To-day I expect you all (as many as you are) to dinner.
Tremó tutto quánto, I tremble all over (from head to foot).

VII. "All," when it means "every thing," may be translated by *tutto*, or by *ogni cósà*, according to euphony; as, —

Idleness renders all (every thing) difficult, *La pigrizia fa parér difficile ogni cósà, or fa parér tutto difficile.*

VIII. "All," used as an adverb, and signifying "entirely," is often rendered thus: *La faccènda è bèlla e finíta, la cósà è bèlla e fáta, le návi sòno bèlle e apparcchiáte*, the affair is entirely finished, the thing is all done, the vessels are all ready.

IX. "No," "no one," is translated by *nessúno*, *niúno*, *verúno*, or by *alcúno* employed only as the object (*alcúno* as the subject signifies "some one"). Any of these Italian words, when used after the verb, is accompanied by *non*; as, —

No country is more beautiful than Tuscany, *Verún pàese è più bello délla Toscana.*
 I never saw that anywhere, *Non ho vedúto quésto in alcúna páрте.*

X. "Some" is translated by *qualche* or *alcúno* (plural *alcúni* or *alquánti*), and not by *quálchi*; as, —

He has been gone some time, *È partíto già da qualche témpo.*
 We have some books, *Abbiámo alcúni libri.*
 I have some of them, *Ne ho alquánti.*

XI. "Such" is rendered by *tále* or *cotále*; as, —

I have seen such a person, *Ho vedúto quel tále.*
 He has such a face as does not please me, *Égli ha úna tál céra che non mi piáce.*

READING LESSON.

Ógni século, ógni época, ógni età, ógni paése, divièn célebre
becomes
 per quálche nuóva scopérta; e il témpo presénte aggiúnge
discovery adds
 sémpre quálche cósà al témpo passáto.

Se la pazzía fósse un dolóre, si sentirébbero laménti in tútte
were should hear
 le cásè.

Ógni língua, per se stéssa, è intraducíbile, per motivo del súo
untranslatable
 caráttere particoláre, che è il frúttò del clima, del govérno, del
 génio, dégli stúdj e délle occupazióni dei pópoli.

Pope asserísce francaménte che dópo la língua gréca, verúna
declares
 língua ha un' armonía cosí imitatíva cóme la língua inglése:
 comúnque síà, nessúno è obbligáto a crédergli.
however that may be

L' educazióne vária quási in ógni paése; ógni uómo assennáto
 procúra di adattársi álle usánze esisténti nel síto in cúi si
endeavors adapt existing
 tróva.
finds himself.

Sénza úna buóna educazióne, il dótto non è áltri che un pe-
 dánte, il filósofo un clínico, il soldáto un brúto, e ógni uómo
 qualsisía sarà spiacevolíssimo.

Non v' è pazzía la quále, per quánto stravagánte éssere póssa,
it may be
 non síà córsa per la ménte a quálche filósofo.
may be passed

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. No farmer is pleased to have grain cheap, no soldier is
 pleased with peace in his country, nor an architect with the
 solidity of houses, nor a doctor with the health of his friends.

2. After the defeat of Perseus, king of Macedon, Paulus Emilius poured such a quantity of silver into the public treasury, that the people were not obliged to pay any tribute during the space of a hundred and five years. Useful and glorious victories!

3. Newton was born on the same day that Galileo died; as if Nature had not wished to have any interval between these two philosophers.

4. A philosopher, who had the misfortune to live under a tyrant, was in the habit of feeling his neck every morning on awaking, to see if his body was still attached to it.

VOCABULARY.

1. Is pleased, *si compiáce di*; nor, *nè*.

2. *Pérseo*; *Macedónia*; *Paólo Emílio*; poured, *versò*; such, *tánta*; during, *per*.

3. As if, *quási*; had not wished to have, *non avésse voluto lasciáre*.

4. To live, *vívère*; under, *sótto*; was in the habit, *soléva*; feeling (of to feel), *di tastársi*; awaking, *destándo*; was still attached, *vi stáva ancóra attaccáta*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

È ógni lingua traducibile?

No, per se stéssa è intraducibile.

Che disse Pope délla lingua inglese?

Veruna lingua ha un' armonía così imitativa.

Cóme i diversí paési divéntano célebri?

Divéntano célebri per quálche nuóva scopérta.

Aggiúnge il témpo presénte al témpo passáto?

Il témpo presénte vi aggiúnge sémpre quálche cosa.

Che è il dótto sénza úna buóna educazione?

Ègli non è áltro che un pedánte.

Cósa è il filósofo sénza educazione?

È un cínico.

Perchè?

Perchè ha un caráttere particolare.

In che giòrno nácque Newton?

Nélló stéssó giòrno in cui morì il Galileo.

Di che è frútto il caráttere d' úna lingua?

È il frútto del clima, del govérno, degli stúdj e délle occupazióne déi pópoli.

CHAPTER XVIII.

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

(*Continued.*)

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Non bisógna rubáre l' ALTRÚI,</i>	We must not rob <i>others</i> .
<i>NIÉnte facéndo, s'impára a fár mále,</i>	Doing <i>nothing</i> , one learns to do evil.
<i>Dópo il fáttö, OGNÚNO è buón consigliére,</i>	After the deed, <i>every one</i> is a good adviser.
<i>Schiávo ALTRÚI si fa chi díce il súo segréto,</i>	He who reveals his secret becomes the slave of <i>others</i> .
<i>Ha da ésser prívo di ógni dif-fétto chi vuól censuráre gli ALTRÚI,</i>	He who wishes to criticise the defects of <i>others</i> should himself be free from them.
<i>È padróne délla víta ALTRÚI chi sprézza la súa,</i>	He is master of the lives of others who despises his own.
<i>Gli farò parláre da QUALCHE-DÚNO,</i>	I will have him spoken to by <i>some one</i> .
<i>OGNÚNO è l'amíco dell' uómo che regála,</i>	<i>Every one</i> is the friend of the man who makes presents.
<i>V'è in CIASCÚN di nói quálche sème di pazzía,</i>	In <i>every one</i> of us there is some germ of folly.
<i>NIÚNO è proféta nélla sua pátria,</i>	<i>No one</i> is a prophet in his own country.
<i>Un malvágio felice non fa in-vidia a NESSÚNO,</i>	<i>Nobody</i> envies a happy wicked person.
<i>Il péggio che póssa fársi è il nón fár NÚLLA,</i>	The worst thing that one can do, is to do <i>nothing</i> .
<i>Il páne d' ALTRI sémpre sa di sále,</i>	The bread of <i>others</i> is always bitter.
<i>Non mi sénto NIÉnte affátto béne,</i>	I do not feel well at <i>all</i> .
<i>Non conviéne beffársi di NESSÚNO,</i>	We should make fun of <i>no one</i> .
<i>Non fáte ingiúrie a CHICCHES-síA,</i>	Injure <i>no one</i> .

I. *Altrúi*, with the article, signifies "the property of others;" as, —

È un ladronaccio l'usurpáre l'altrúi, It is a theft to usurp the goods of others.

II. "One" and "another" are translated by *gli úni*, *gli áltrí*; as, Fortune humbles one, and exalts another, *la fortúna abbássa gli úni, e innálza gli áltrí.*

III. The above sentence may be differently constructed; as, Some ascend, others descend: thus go the wheels of fortune, *Chi sále, chi scénde, or áltrí sále, áltrí scénde, or quál sále, quál scénde, or quèsti sále, quégli scénde: così va la ruóta délla fortúna.*

IV. For the correct use of all these forms, the choice of which depends on taste guided by the ear, we must remember, first, that *chi*, and sometimes *quále*, may be repeated many times; second, that the word *áltrí*,* employed without an article, is a noun in the singular, indicating a person.

V. "Nothing" is rendered by *niénte* or *núlla*. The negation *non* is used when one of these words comes after the verb; as, —

It is better to labor without an object than to do nothing,	<i>È méglío lavoráre sénza scópo che il non fár núlla.</i>
He who observes nothing, learns nothing,	<i>Chi núlla ossérva, núlla impára; or, chi non ossérva núlla, non impára núlla.</i>

VI. *Niénte* or *núlla* is often used in the sense of "something," "any thing:" in which case it is generally placed after the verb; as, —

S'io pòsso far núlla per vói, If I can do any thing for you,
comandátemi, command me.

* *Áltrí* is a word very much used in elegant style, and must not be confounded with *gli áltrí*, which means "the others."

This word, as well as *chi*, belongs to persons: *quále* refers to persons and things; as in this verse of Petrarca: "*Quál si posáva in térra, e quál su l'ónde*," some (flowers) were on the earth, others upon the waves. These words all require the verb in the singular.

VII. The word "nothing," employed negatively, may sometimes be translated by *che*; the verb being preceded by *non*, and sometimes by *cósa*.

The idle have nothing to do,	<i>I pigri non hanno che. fàre.</i>
He who is innocent has nothing to fear,	<i>Chi è innocente non ha che tenéte.</i>

VIII. *Núlla* and *niénte* are sometimes used with an article; as, Sempronio rose from nothing, *Semprónio è sórto dal núlla*. The following phrases are thus translated:—

He is a man of nothing,	<i>È un uómo di niénte.</i>
A man good for nothing,	<i>Un uómo da niénte.</i>
He has quarrelled with us for a trifle,	<i>S'è corrucciáto con nói per úna inézia, or per úna bagattélla.</i>
This man is nothing to me,	<i>Non ho alcuna affinità, or relazione con lui.</i>

IX. *Si* is generally considered as an indefinite pronoun, and is used both for the masculine and feminine gender, singular and plural: it is equivalent to the English words "one," "we," "people," "they;" as,—

<i>Cóme si è détto,</i>	As we have said.
<i>Si parláva di guérra,</i>	People talked of war.
<i>Si loderà mólto il súo corággio,</i>	They will praise his courage very much.
<i>Si véde che siéte un galantuómo,</i>	One sees that you are a gentleman.

But, in these and similar phrases, *si* holds the place of a passive proposition, and may be equally well rendered in English by "it is," "it was," "it will be;" as,—

<i>Si credevi così generalménte,</i>	It was generally so believed.
<i>Si dice che la páce è già fermáta,</i>	It is said that the peace is already concluded.

X. *Non*, when used in a sentence expressing an indefinite meaning, is always placed at the commencement as, *Non si può fàr núlla*, one can do nothing.

I grándi sómo cóme quéi mulíni erétti sülle montágne, i quáli
erected
 non dánno farina se non quándo si dà lóro del vénto.
give gives

Alcúni si divertívano in cása di úna signóra a trováre dèlle
 differénze ingegnóse da un oggétto ad un áltro. "Quál differ-
 éntza," dísse la Signóra, "si potrébbe fáre fra me ed un oriúolo." —
could make

"Signóra," égli le rispóse, "un oriúolo índica le óre, e apprésso
near
 di vói, si diménticano."
forgets.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. There is not a man who can say, I have need of no one.
2. There is nothing more dangerous than to have for enemies those whom we have laden with benefits.
3. Every man may presume with reason, that no one can ever succeed to a perfect knowledge of all the secrets and all the riches of nature.
4. The same deed, the same word, awakens remembrances agreeable to some, and sad to others. Whosoever looked at Caligula's forehead, excited in him sudden anger, because this action reminded him of his baldness, which he wished to conceal from everybody; but he who looked at the forehead of Scipio Africanus, gave him great pleasure, because he had a warlike wound there, — a witness of his valor and his glory.
5. Some one, in speaking of a tyrant who enjoyed the reputation of liberality, said, "Judge how much liberality dominates in this man; who gives not only his own spoils, but even those of others."
6. Envy is certainly the basest and the most cruel of all the passions, since there is hardly any person who may not have in himself something to excite the passion of the envious.
7. Never do to others that which you would not wish others should do to you.
8. One day a lady wrote to her husband this letter, which may serve for a perfect model of laconism: "Having nothing to do, I write to you; having nothing to say to you, I finish."

VOCABULARY.

1. There is not, *non v'è*; can, *póssa*; need, *bisógna*.
2. Laden with benefits, *beneficáto*.
3. May, *può*; presume, *presúmere*; succeed, *perveníre*.
4. Same deed, *stéssó fáttó*; awakens, *svéglia*; looked at, *guardáva*; excited in him sudden anger, *suscitáva in lui súbito adé-gno*; reminded, *rammentáva*; baldness, *calvézza*; to conceal, *nas-cóndere*; Scipióne l'Africáno; great pleasure, *magnánimo pia-cére*; warlike, *marziále*.
5. Judge, *pensáte*; dominates, *régna*; not only, *non solaménte*; gives, *dóna*; his own spoils, *la róba súa*; even, *ancóra*.
6. There is hardly, *v'è quási*; to excite, *da suscitáre*; envious, *invidióso*.
7. Never do, *non fáte*; wish, *vorréste*.
8. Wrote, *scrísse*; may serve, *può servíre*; I write, *scrívo*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <i>Con chi siéte venúto?</i> | <i>Con nessúno.</i> |
| <i>Avéte áltre amíche?</i> | <i>Non ne ho áltre.</i> |
| <i>Chi ha détto ciò?</i> | <i>Ognúno lo díce.</i> |
| <i>Sóno le vóstre dúe soréлле ricche?</i> | <i>L'úna è ricca, l'áltra è póvera.</i> |
| <i>Cóme sóno i commandánte?</i> | <i>Gelósi gli úni dégli áltri.</i> |
| <i>Voléte (will you) avér quálche cosa?</i> | <i>No, vi ringrázio (thank you), non vóglio níente.</i> |
| <i>Qualcúno píccia, andáte a vedére chi è?</i> | <i>È la Signora K.</i> |
| <i>Non crédesi che avrémo (shall have) la páce?</i> | <i>Non è probábile.</i> |
| <i>Avéte ritrováto le léttere perdúte?</i> | <i>Ne ho ritrováte alcúne, ma la maggiór párté sóno perdúte.</i> |
| <i>Sóno fratélli quéstí dúe uómini?</i> | <i>Non so (I do not know); si rassomigliano (resemble) l'úno all'áltro.</i> |
| <i>Che si díce (say) dī nuóvo?</i> | <i>Non ho létto (read) néssun giornále óggi, ma si díce che ci sóno cattíve núove.</i> |
| <i>Dóve l'avéte intéso?</i> | <i>In casa d'un amíco e per vía d'úna léttera priváta.</i> |

CHAPTER XIX.

THE PREPOSITIONS *DI*, *A*, *DA*.

A thorough acquaintance with these prepositions is absolutely necessary, and therefore requires the attention of the pupil: first, because the English and Italians differ somewhat in the use of them; and, second, because they are the signs which establish the connection between our ideas, and the slightest error in their interpretation would entirely change the sense of a phrase.*

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Io sòn DEL vòstro parére,</i>	I am of your opinion.
<i>Vòi mi pagáte DI cattiva monéta,[†]</i>	You pay me with ingratitude.
<i>Il móndo va DA sè stésso,</i>	The world goes by itself.
<i>Si è cacciáto A ridere,[†]</i>	He burst out laughing.
<i>Le Álpi sepáranò l'Itália DÁL- LA Fráncia,</i>	The Alps separate Italy from France.
<i>La pólvère du cannóne fu inven- táta DA un fráte,</i>	Gunpowder was invented by a friar.
<i>Vòi non avéte ragióne DA far valére,</i>	You have no good reason to give.
<i>Andáte A vedére che còsa c' è,</i>	Go, see what it is.
<i>Vòi mi trattáte per DA più che sóno,</i>	You do me more honor than I deserve.
<i>Io ho détto DA schérzo e vói fáte davvéro,</i>	I said it in joke, and you took it for earnest.
<i>Dátemi la mía véste DA cámera e il berrettino DA nótte,</i>	Give me my night-gown and night-cap.
<i>DÁLL' ópera si conósce il maé- stro,</i>	We know the master by the work.
<i>Siéte vói maritáta o DA mari- táre?</i>	Are you married, or to be mar- ried?
<i>È venúto nessúno A domandáre di me?</i>	Has no one come to ask for me?

* Observe that some of the prepositions govern one, two, or three cases.

PREPOSITIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>Di,*</i>	of.	<i>Accáto,</i>	aside, about, near, by.
<i>A,†</i>	to, in, at.	<i>Alláto,</i>	" " " "
<i>Da,‡</i>	from, by, on, at.	<i>Attórno,</i>	about, around. "
<i>In,§</i>	in, on, upon.	<i>Dattórno,</i>	" "
<i>Con,</i>	with.	<i>Addósso,</i>	on, upon, about.
<i>Per,</i>	through, by, on account of, in order to, for.	<i>Préssso,</i>	near, almost.
<i>Su,</i>	on, upon.	<i>Apprésso,</i>	" "
<i>Sopra,</i>	" "	<i>Vicino,</i>	" "
<i>Sotto,</i>	under.	<i>Lungi,</i>	far, from.
<i>Fra,</i>	amongst, within.	<i>Lontáno,</i>	" "
<i>Tra,</i>	" "	<i>Áppo,||</i>	at, with, in comparison with.
<i>Infra,</i>	in, in about.	<i>Verso,¶</i>	towards.
<i>Intra,</i>	" " "	<i>Óltra,</i>	beyond, besides.
<i>Príma,</i>	before.	<i>Óltre,</i>	" "
<i>Dópo,</i>	after.	<i>Lúngo,</i>	along.
<i>Ánzi,</i>	before, in presence of.	<i>Fino,</i>	till, until, as far as.
<i>Innánzi,</i>	" " " "	<i>Sino,</i>	" " " " "
<i>Dinánzi,</i>	" " " "	<i>Infino,</i>	" " " " "
<i>Avánti,</i>	" " " "	<i>Insino,</i>	" " " " "
<i>Davánti,</i>	" " " "	<i>Cóntra,**</i>	against.
<i>Diétro,</i>	behind.	<i>Cóntro,</i>	" "
<i>Didiétro,</i>	" "	<i>A-frónte,††</i>	opposite.
<i>Éntro,</i>	in, within.	<i>Rimpétto,</i>	" "
<i>Déntro,</i>	" "	<i>Dirimpétto,</i>	" "
<i>Fuóra,</i>	out of, without, besides.	<i>Sénza,‡‡</i>	without.
<i>Fuóri,</i>	" " " "	<i>Sálvo,</i>	except, excepted.
<i>Infuóri,</i>	except, excepted.	<i>Eccétto,</i>	" "
		<i>Tránne,</i>	" "

The pupil is requested to commit to memory the phrases given under the various prepositions.

* From the Celtic *de*, a sign of qualification.

† From the Celtic *a*, near, joining with.

‡ From the Celtic *da*, at.

§ From the Celtic *en*, in.

|| From the Latin *apud*, Celtic *ap*, joint, attached.

¶ From the Latin *versus*, Celtic *gwero*, to turn.

** From the Celtic *con*, a sign of opposition; and *trach*, side.

†† From the Latin *frons*, Celtic *fron*, before.

‡‡ And *sinza* and *san* (used by old writers). From the Latin *sine*, Celtic *sy*, want, privation. — *Bachi*.

DI.*

I. *Domandare di uno, domandare la presenza di uno*, to ask the presence of some one; *far d'occhio, fare un cenno d'occhio*, to make a sign of the eye; *far di cappello, fare un saluto di cappello*, to salute with the hat; *dare di penna, dare un colpo di penna*, to efface with the pen; *dare del briccone, dare il titolo di briccone*, to treat as a villain; *punire di morte, punire colla pena di morte*, to punish with penalty of death; *accusare di furto, accusare per delitto di furto*, to accuse of theft.

II. Many adverbial phrases are formed with the preposition *di*; such as *di rado*, rarely; *di soppiatto, di nascosto*, in secret; *di certo*, certainly; *di fresco, di nuovo*, newly; etc.

A.

III. The preposition *a*, in Italian, is a sign of the dative: it is used to mark the object towards which the action or the intention of the subject is directed. It expresses the idea of tendency of action, of attribution, or of proximity to a place or person; as, —

<i>Egli venne A trovarmi,</i>	He came to me.
<i>Mandare A vedere, A cercare,</i>	To send to see, to find.
<i>Avvicinarsi AD uno,</i>	To approach some one.
<i>Appoggiarsi AD uno,</i>	To lean upon some one.
<i>Appoggiarsi AL muro,</i>	To lean against the wall.
<i>Vicino AL fuoco, AL letto,</i>	Near the fire, the bed.
<i>AL tempo di Noè,</i>	At the time of Noah.
<i>Voltarsi AD uno,</i>	To turn to a person.
<i>Andare ALLA VOLTA di Milano,</i>	To go towards Milan.
<i>Porre mente AD ogni cosa,</i>	To pay attention to every thing.
<i>Passare ALL' altra parte della strada,</i>	To go on the other side of the street.

It will be seen that all the verbs of motion, which express a direction towards some object, are followed by the preposition *a*.

* The preposition *di* may express a relation of possession, of extraction, or of qualification, as in English.

IV. There are many other expressions in Italian in which the preposition *a* is likewise employed ; such as —

<i>Tagliáre</i> <i>A</i> <i>fétte</i> ,	To cut in slices.
<i>Andáre</i> <i>A</i> <i>dúe a dúe</i> ,	To go two by two.
<i>Morivano</i> <i>A</i> <i>migliáia</i> ,	They died by thousands.
<i>Imparáre</i> <i>A</i> <i>ménte</i> ,	To learn by heart.
<i>Stáre</i> <i>ALL' értá</i> ,*	To be upon one's guard.
<i>Andáre</i> , <i>parláre</i> <i>AL búio</i> ,	To walk, to speak in the dark.
<i>Tenéte</i> <i>le máni</i> <i>A</i> <i>vói</i> ,	To keep your hands near you.
<i>Stáre</i> <i>A</i> <i>cápo chíno</i> , <i>A</i> <i>bócca</i> <i>apérta</i> ,	To be with the head down, and mouth open.

V. The Italians say, adverbially, *álle sfuggíta*, by stealth ; *all' impazzáta*, foolishly ; *all' impensáta*, suddenly ; *álle rinfúsa*, pell-mell ; *álle peggío*, at the worst ; *álle méglío*, at the best ; *álle gróssa*, nearly.

DA.

VI. *Da* is the sign of the ablative : it is used to express the point from which persons or things depart ; as, —

<i>Allontanársi</i> <i>DA</i> <i>Parígi</i> ,	To go from Paris.
<i>Liberársi</i> <i>DA</i> <i>un impégnó</i> ,	To get out of a difficulty.
<i>I piacére</i> <i>náscono</i> <i>DAI</i> <i>bisógni</i> ,	Pleasures spring from wants.
<i>Separársi</i> <i>DÁLLA</i> <i>famiglia</i> ,	To separate from one's family.
<i>Astenérsi</i> <i>DAL</i> <i>ridere</i> , <i>DAL</i> <i>parláre</i> ,	To abstain from laughing, from talking.
<i>Reparársi</i> <i>DAL</i> <i>vénto</i> , <i>DÁLLA</i> <i>pióggia</i> ,	To shelter one's self from the wind and from the rain.
<i>DALL' áno</i> <i>or</i> <i>sin</i> <i>DÁLL' áno scórso</i> ,	Since last year.
<i>La carità</i> <i>comíncia</i> <i>DA</i> <i>sè médesímo</i> ,	Charity begins at home.
<i>La móglie</i> <i>dipénde</i> <i>DAL</i> <i>maríto</i> ,	The wife depends on her husband.
<i>Staccáre</i> <i>úna</i> <i>cósa</i> <i>DA</i> <i>un áltra</i> ,	To detach one thing from another.
<i>Venire</i> <i>DAL</i> <i>teátro</i> , <i>DA</i> <i>cása</i> ,	To come from the theatre, from the house.

* *All' értá*. This *all' értá* has given rise to the English word "alert."

<i>Èssere incalzato</i> DAL nemico,	To be pursued by the enemy.
<i>Giudicare</i> DALLE apparenze,	To judge by appearances.
<i>Andate</i> DA quèlla parte,	To go on that side.
<i>Che volete</i> DA me?	What do you wish of me?
<i>Fare una cosa</i> DA sè, or DA per sè,	To do a thing alone, or by one's self.
<i>Guardarsi</i> DA uno,	To be on one's guard against one.
<i>Distinguere</i> il véro DAL falso,	To distinguish the true from the false.
<i>Cadér</i> DA cavállo, DALL' álbero,	To fall from a horse; from a tree.
<i>Difendersi</i> DAGLI ipócriti, DAI ládri, DAL nemico,	To defend one's self against hypocrites, thieves, and enemies.

VII. The verbs *uscire*, *venire*, *muovere*, *levarsi*, to go out, to come, to move, to rise, etc., sometimes take *di* for the sake of euphony, particularly when the article is not used; as, *Esco di chiésa*, *si levò di tavola*, I go out of church, he rose from the table. With the verb *cadére*, the Italians say, *Cadér di máno*,* *di bócca*, to fall from the hand, from the mouth; but with the article, and, above all, in the plural, they say, *Uscir dalla chiésa*, *cadér dalle máni*, to go out of the church, to let fall from the hands.

VIII. "Out of" is translated by *fuór di*, because it sounds better than *fuór da*; as, *Fuóri di pericolo*, out of danger.

IX. *Da* is likewise used before words marking the use, employment, or distinction of a thing; as, —

<i>Carta</i> DA scrivere,	writing-paper.
<i>Carta</i> DA lettere,	letter-paper.
<i>Acqua</i> DA bere,	water to drink.
<i>Casa</i> DA vèndere,	house to sell.
<i>Fótte</i> DA ólio,	oil-cask.
<i>Cámara</i> DA létto,	bed-chamber.
<i>Ragúzza</i> DA maritáre,	a marriageable girl.

* *Máno* admits of various significations in idiomatic phrases. (See list of idioms.)

X. *Da* is employed to express the idea of aptitude, etc. ; as, —

Armi DA difendérsi,

Non sónó còse DA dirsi,

L'erráre è DA uómo,

Uómo DA móltó, DA póco, DA niénite, DA sténto,

Son còse DA ridere,

Non è còsa DA un pári vòstro,

È una ragázza DA maríto,

Arms proper for defence.

They are not things to be said.

It is human to err.

A man fit for many things, for few things, for nothing, for fatigue.

They are things to cause laughter.

It is not proper for such a man as you.

A young lady of marriageable age.

XI. *Da* may be used in various other ways ; as, —

Avéte DA fáre?

Dátemi DA lavoráre,

Veníte quà DA me,

Díte DA búrla?

Díte DA véro, or DAVvéro?

Uómo DA béne, or DABbéne,

Andáte DAL fornáio,

Andrò DA mia mádre,

Víve DA Signóre,

Ha trattáto DA birbánte,

Ègli fa DA dottóre, da médi-co,

Vì giúro DA galantuómo,

Have you something to do?

Give me something to do.

Come here near me.

Do you say it in jest?

Do you speak seriously?

An honest man.

Go to the baker's.

I shall go to my mother's.

He lives like a lord.

He has behaved like a rogue.

He plays the doctor, the physician.

I swear to you upon the faith of a gentleman.

READING LESSON.

Napoleóne andáto a Miláno a fársi incoronáre re d' Itália, vis-gone

itò l' Università di Pávia. Egli si féce presentáre i professóre, made

e domandò di Scárpa. Gli fu détto che era státo depósto was said was (had) been deposed

dállá súa cattedra per non avér volúto prestáre giuraménto to have wished to take

al nuóvo govérno. Eh! che impórta, riprése Buonapárte, il
replied
 giuraménto e le opinióni polítiche! Scárpa onóra l' Università
 ed il mío státó.

Il nóme sólo di Róma è una stória di maravíglie che scálda il
warms
 pétto ad ógni mortále. Térra dégli éroi, cápo del móndo;
 innánzi a léi sparírono nazióni, pópoli e città famóse, ed élla
before disappeared
 stétte e stà onóre e glória d' Itália, aspettándo che suóni l' óra
stood stands awaiting may sound
 d' úna nuóva grandézza.

Un giòrno Brásidas trovò tra alcúni fíchi sécchi un sórcio, che
found
 lo mórse si fattamén-te che lo lasciò andár vía. Voi vedéte,
bit let see
 disse a chi gli stáva intórno, che non v' è animalétto, il quále,
stood
 per píccolo che sía, non póssa scampár la víta óve ábbia il
may be can save may have
 cuóre di diféndersi da chi l' assále.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. If you wish to have a faithful servant, serve yourself.
2. "Deliver me from my friends," said a philosopher; "because I can defend myself against my enemies."
3. We should abstain from such truths as have the appearance of falsehood.
4. Amerigo Vespucci, of Florence, made many discoveries in the New World in the year one thousand four hundred ninety-seven. Hence it was called America, from this navigator.
5. Princes ought to punish as princes, and not as executioners.
6. The knowledge of foreign languages serves to correct and perfect our own.
7. The changes of státes, far from injuring, often aid in the rapid progress of civilization and the arts.
8. "From the evils which the barbarians brought into Italy," said Varchi, "two good things have come forth,—our Italian language, and the city of Venice."

VOCABULARY.

1. If you wish, *se voléte* ; serve yourself, *servítevi da voi*.
2. Deliver me, *liberátemi* ; I can (shall) defend, *difenderò*.
3. We should abstain, *conviéne astenersi* ; appearance, *fáccia*.
4. Made, *féce* ; hence it was called, *che venne quindi chiamato*.
5. Ought, *débbono*.
6. Our own, *la própria*.
7. Injuring (to injure), *nuócere* ; aid, *gióvano*.
8. Brought, *portáti* ; have come forth, *nácquero*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

<i>Dóve andáte?</i>	<i>Vádo a teátro.</i>
<i>Con chi andáte?</i>	<i>Con mío marito (husband).</i>
<i>Che avéte da fáre,</i>	<i>Non ho niénte da fáre.</i>
<i>Dóve va il Dóttore?</i>	<i>Égli va in campáña.</i>
<i>Che avéte?</i>	<i>Ho del caffè e úna focáccia.</i>
<i>A chi sarà dedicáto quéstó mon- uménto?</i>	<i>Sarà dedicáto a Mozart.</i>
<i>Dóve trováste voi (did you find) i líbri?</i>	<i>Io li trovái súlla távola.</i>
<i>Cóme andávano (went) i fanci- úlli?</i>	<i>A dúe a dúe.</i>
<i>Sóno le távole e le sédie nélla cámara?</i>	<i>Sì, sóno nélla cámara.</i>
<i>Veníte da me óggi?</i>	<i>Non pòsso ; non éSCO (go out) di cása.</i>
<i>Che cása avéte?</i>	<i>Úna buóna cása a tre piáni (floors).</i>
<i>Dátemi di grázia dúe uóva.</i>	<i>Non ne abbíamo, ma abbíamo páne e butírro.</i>
<i>Ha égli del pépe?</i>	<i>Sì, Signóre, ha del pépe, e del sále.</i>
<i>Che voléte fáre?</i>	<i>Ho intenzióne di andáre al hál- lo, ma andrò prima da míra mádre.</i>

CHAPTER XX.

THE PREPOSITIONS *CON*, *IN*, *PER*.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Io lo vidi co' miei proprj occhi,</i>	I saw him <i>with</i> my own eyes.
<i>Assistetemi coi vostri consigli,</i>	Assist me <i>with</i> your counsels.
<i>La Senna mette fôce in mare,</i>	The Seine flows <i>into</i> the sea.
<i>Léggo PER divertirmi,</i>	I read (<i>for</i>) to amuse myself.
<i>Io appunto ho mandato PER voi,</i>	I have just sent <i>for</i> you.
<i>Egli ha dato in luce un' ôpera,</i>	He has published a work.
<i>È famoso PER le sue imprese,</i>	He is famous <i>by</i> his exploits.
<i>Tutti parlavano in una volta,</i>	They all spoke <i>at</i> once.
<i>Diède un' occhiata in giro,</i>	He cast a glance <i>around</i> him.
<i>Io vengo a bella posta per voi,</i>	I come expressly <i>for</i> you.
<i>Lo farète con vostro comodo,</i>	You will do it at your leisure.
<i>È virtù il dir molto in pochi détti,</i>	It is a talent to say much <i>in</i> few words.
<i>È cosa che non gli può capir in testa,</i>	It is something which he cannot understand.
<i>Le selle non son fatte PER gli asini,</i>	Saddles are not made <i>for</i> asses.
<i>Dice quello che gli viène in bocca,</i>	He said what came <i>into</i> his head.
<i>Quella donna si adira CON tutti,</i>	This woman gets angry <i>with</i> everybody.
<i>PER carità, non mi precipitate!</i>	For pity's sake, do not destroy me!
<i>È un uomo chiaro PER nobiltà,</i>	He is a man illustrious <i>by</i> his nobility.
<i>Vado ad aspettarvi IN giardino,</i>	I shall wait for you <i>in</i> the garden.
<i>Voi cercate d'ingarbugliarmi CON parole che non intendo,</i>	You try to confuse me <i>with</i> words which I do not understand.
<i>Ognun per sè e Dio per tutti,</i>	Every one for himself, and God for us all.

CON (*with*).

I. *Con* is used as in English in such sentences as the following :—

<i>Strignere amicizia CON alcuno,</i>	To make friends <i>with</i> some one.
<i>Egli parla COGLI occhi chiusi,</i>	He speaks <i>with</i> his eyes shut.
<i>Dorme COLLA bocca aperta,</i>	He sleeps <i>with</i> his mouth open.
<i>Parlarsi COGLI occhi,</i>	To speak <i>with</i> the eyes.
<i>Percuotere COL piede,</i>	To stamp <i>with</i> the feet.
<i>Far cenno CON LA mano, COL capo,</i>	To make a sign <i>with</i> the hand, <i>with</i> the head.
<i>Dire CON voce bassa, CON voce sonora,</i>	To speak <i>in</i> a low voice, <i>in</i> a sonorous voice.
<i>Lavorare COL pennello, COLLO scalpello,</i>	To work <i>with</i> pincers, <i>with</i> a chisel.
<i>Fare una cosa CON piacere, CON facilità, CON difficoltà, CON destrezza,</i>	To do a thing <i>with</i> pleasure, <i>with</i> facility, <i>with</i> difficulty, <i>with</i> dexterity.
<i>Parlare COL cuore in mano,</i>	To speak <i>in</i> an open-hearted manner.
<i>È uscito COL servitore,</i>	He has gone out <i>with</i> his servant.

II. In some phrases, the Italians use *con* where the English use *by*; as, *Illustrarsi COL suo merito*, to make himself illustrious *by* his merit.

IN (*in*).

III. *In* follows a verb when it expresses the existence of an object in or upon another; as will be seen by the following :—

<i>Il pranzo è IN tavola,</i>	The dinner is <i>upon</i> the table.
<i>Ponete vino IN tavola,</i>	Put the wine <i>upon</i> the table.
<i>Andare IN villeggiatura,</i>	To go <i>into</i> the country.
<i>Essere IN mare,</i>	To be <i>upon</i> the sea.
<i>Cadere IN terra,</i>	To fall <i>to</i> the earth.
<i>Non ho denari INDosso,*</i>	I have no money about me.
<i>Io non entro NEI fatti vostri,</i>	I do not meddle <i>in</i> your affairs.
<i>Alzarsi IN punta di piede,</i>	To stand <i>on</i> tiptoe.

* *Indosso* is from *in* and *dosso*, back.

IN <i>mia</i> , IN <i>sua véce</i> , <i>Èssere</i> IN <i>potère di</i> , <i>èssere</i> NEL- LA <i>cuna</i> , <i>Stàre</i> IN <i>pièdi</i> IN <i>mézzo alla</i> <i>piazza</i> , <i>Tutti gli sgúardi érano fissi</i> IN <i>lui</i> , <i>Stàre</i> IN <i>città</i> , IN <i>villa</i> , IN <i>càsa</i> , <i>Io l' ho gettato</i> IN <i>màre</i> , <i>Morìre</i> IN <i>età di cento ànni</i> ,	<i>In</i> my, <i>in</i> his place. To be at the power of, to be <i>in</i> the cradle. To stand up <i>in</i> the middle of the place. Every look was fixed <i>upon</i> him. To live <i>in</i> the city, <i>in</i> the town, <i>in</i> the house. I have thrown him <i>into</i> the sea. To die <i>at</i> the age of one hun- dred.
---	--

IV. In elegant style, *in* is sometimes used instead of *cóntro* (against); as, *Vendicàrsi* IN *úno*, to avenge one's self *against* another; *incrudelìre* NE' *súoi schiàvi*, to be cruel *to* (against) his slaves.

V. It is difficult to know when to use the article with *in*, and when to suppress it; and there can be no positive rules given on this point. We must, however, observe that *in* is generally used without an article for any thing which is, or seems to be, on the surface; as, *Il vascéllo che éra* IN *màre si è róttó* NEGLI *scógli*, the vessel which was *upon* the sea is broken *on* the rocks; *i pésci vivono* NEL *màre*, fish live *in* the sea.

PER (*for, by, through, etc.*).

VI. The preposition *per* indicates two distinct connections:—

1. It denotes the idea of passage; as,—

<i>Scrìvere</i> PER <i>la pósta</i> , <i>Èssere crudéle</i> PER <i>natúra</i> , <i>Operàre</i> PER <i>interésse</i> , <i>Préndere</i> PER <i>bracció</i> , <i>Pagàre cínque frànchi</i> PER <i>giór- no</i> , PER <i>pàdre égli è nóbile</i> ,	To write <i>by</i> post. To be cruel <i>by</i> nature. To work <i>for</i> interest. To take <i>by</i> the arm. To pay five francs <i>a</i> day. <i>Through</i> his father, he is of no- ble birth.
---	--

PER un século, PER un éno,
Una vóce córre PER la città,
Viaggiàre PER la Frància,
Passàre PER la Frància, PER la
cámara, PER la pórtà,

During (for) a year, a century.
A rumor runs through the city.
To travel through France.
To pass through France, through
the chamber, through the
door.

2. *Per* serves also to mark the aim or object of a person; as, —

Egli è mórtò PER la pátria,
Io lavóro PER i miéi scolári,
Fúrono lasciáti PER mórti,

He died for his country.
I work for my pupils.
They were left for dead.

VII. We can also say, *nélla città, nélla strada, in Frància*; but the idea of motion is better expressed by the word *per*, rendering the phrase more forcible.

VIII. We also say, —

PER verità, io non lo crédo,
Ègli è venúto PER pártè di úno,
Èssere PER, or stàre PER,
PER me vi assicúrq che,
Io ho quél che díte più che PER
véro,
Andáte PE' fútti vóstri;

In truth, I do not believe it.
He came from some one.
To be about to.
As for me, I assure you that.
I perfectly believe all that you
say.
Let me alone; or, mind your
business.
He may tire himself as much
as he will, nothing succeeds
with him.

PER quánto si affatichi, tútto gli
va a vóto,

READING LESSON.

Un giovinóttò avéva i capélli néri e la bárba biánca. Tútti domandávano la caúsa di un tal fenómeno. Un mottegggiatóre rispóse: “Perchè forse quel Signóre ha lavoráto più cólla mascél-
 labored
 la che col cervéllo.

Giúlio secóndo, in età di 70 ánni, con un élmo in cápo montò all' assálto délla mirándola. Si díce che un giòrno, quéstò pápa guerriéro buttásse nel Tévere le chiávi di San Piétro, per non
 threw
 aver più ad usàre, dicéva egli, che la spáda di San Páolo.

Un buón vécchio párroco di vílla, che éra débole di vísta, e
 avéa le dita póco elástiche, stáva leggéndo in pùlpito un cápo
was reading
 délla génesi. A quéste paróle: "Il Signóre diéde ad Adámo
gave
 úna móglie," voltò dúe págine in úna vólta, e sénza abbadárvi
he turned perceiving it
 lésse tuttavía con vóce fòrte e chiára: "Ed élla éra incatramáta
read pitched
 per di déntro e per di fuóri." Quel buón piováno si éra
without. parson
 disgraziataménte imbattúto nella descrizióne dell' árca di Noè.
unfortunately lighted upon

Bisógna che l' uómo ábbia tánto sénno da sapérsi accomodáre
 alle costumánze délle nazióni nelle quáli si tróva. Per mancánza
is. want
 di un chiódo si pérde il férrò ad un cavállo; per mancánza di
lost shoe (iron)
 un férrò si pérde il cavállo, e per mancánza di un cavállo, ánche
 il cavaliére è perdúto, perchè il nemíco lo sopraggiúnge, l'
succeeded
 ammázza, e tútto quéstó per non avér pósto ménte ad un chiódo
killed put
 d' un férrò del súo cavállo.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. It is a great misfortune not to have wit enough to speak well, nor judgment enough to keep silent.

2. In this world, we ought to be born either a king or a fool: a king, to be able to avenge injuries, and punish the vices of men; a fool, so as not to perceive injuries, or be troubled by any thing.

3. A caricature represented George III. with a very large sleeve, from which Napoleon wished to come out; but, as soon as he put out his nose, George gave him a push to force him back into the sleeve.

4. We shall be measured by the same measure as we measure others.

5. We should be careful not to lose time and words in refuting things evidently false. Zeno denied motion, and Diogenes began to walk without saying a word: Zeno persisted in his paradox, and Diogenes continued to walk.

VOCABULARY.

1. To speak, *parlâre*; to keep silent, *stâre zitto*.
2. We ought to be born, *converrébbe nascere*; to be able, *potere*; to avenge, *vendicare*; to punish, *castigare*; to perceive (to know), *conoscere*; or to be troubled, *nè darsi pensiero*.
3. Represented, *figurava*; *Giorgio*; wished to come out, *voléva uscire*; put out, *sporgéva*; gave, *dava*; to force him back, *per fôrlo tornâr dentro*.
4. Measured, *misurâti*; we measure, *misuriâmo*.
5. We should be, etc., *bisogna guardârsi dal perdere*; in refuting, *nel confutare*; denied, *negava*; began to walk, *si mise a passeggiare*; persisted, *persistette*; continued, *continuò*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

<i>Che fa il vóstro sêrvo?</i>	<i>Ègli fa un cénno col capo.</i>
<i>Che viúol (wishes) dire?</i>	<i>Che il prânzo è in távola.</i>
<i>Dov' è la vóstra amíca?</i>	<i>È uscita col servitóre.</i>
<i>Che è cadúto in térra?</i>	<i>Lo scalpéllo con cui lavóro.</i>
<i>Perchè è il Signór M. famóso?</i>	<i>Per le sùe ópere letterárie.</i>
<i>Che cosa ha égli fúto?</i>	<i>Ha dato in luce mólte ópere.</i>
<i>L' avéte létte?</i>	<i>Sì, le ho létte con piacére.</i>
<i>Cóme ha égli parláto?</i>	<i>Ha parláto col cuóre.</i>
<i>Dóve státe óra?</i>	<i>Sto in città.</i>
<i>Prestátemi un dóllaro:</i>	<i>Non ne ho in dóssó.</i>
<i>Che si dice del fù Capitáno?</i>	<i>Che égli è mórté per la pátria.</i>
<i>Perchè lavóra il Signór B.?</i>	<i>Lavóra per suói scolári.</i>
<i>Voléte andáre in véce mia?</i>	<i>Sì, andrò in véce vóstra.</i>
<i>Che chiedéte (demand) vói?</i>	<i>Chiédo danáro in préstito.</i>
<i>È crudéle quést' animále?</i>	<i>Per natúra non è crudéle.</i>
<i>Ha égli compráto úna carózza?</i>	<i>No, è tróppo aváro per far qués- ta spésa.</i>

CHAPTER XXI.

THE PREPOSITIONS.

(Continued.)

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Ciò sia detto FRA di noi,</i>	That may be said among us.
<i>Egli verrà FRA dieci giorni,</i>	He will arrive in ten days.
<i>Che c'è quì DENTRO?</i>	What is that within?
<i>Facciamocegli INCÓTRO,</i>	Let us go to meet him.
<i>Io le sedéva ACCÁNTO,</i>	I was seated beside her.
<i>Egli stétte alquánto SÓPRA di se,'</i>	He stopped some time to reflect.
<i>Noè nacque PRIMA del dilúvio,</i>	Noah was born before the flood,
<i>e morì DÓPO il dilúvio,</i>	and died after it.
<i>Vènni quèsta máne A càsa vós- tra,</i>	This morning I went to your house.
<i>Non v'è còsa nuóva SÓTTO il sóle,</i>	There is nothing new under the sun.
<i>Élla ha trováto un maríto SE- CÓNDO il suo génio,</i>	She has found a husband ac- cording to her taste.
<i>Nèll invérno si sta béne ACCÁN- TO al fuóco.</i>	In winter, one is well near the fireside.
<i>Bisógna vivere SECÓNDO le léggi dèlla natúra,</i>	We ought to live according to the laws of Nature.
<i>Non vo mái a létto PRIMA dell' álba,</i>	I never go to bed before day- break.
<i>Il sónno IN SUL mattíno è saluté- vole,</i>	Sleep in the morning is healthy.
<i>Ánimo. Signorína; vién tárdi: levátevi SU,</i>	Come, miss; it is late: get up.
<i>Che avéte fátto INFÍNO ad óra?</i>	What have you done up to the present moment?
<i>Ciascúno è padróne IN càsa sua,</i>	Every one is master in his own house.
<i>Quéndò avrò CÀSA MÍA, inviterò tutti i miéi amíci,</i>	When I have a house of my own, I will invite all my friends.

UPON.

I. "Upon" is often translated by *in*; as, —

I will wait for you on the piazza,	<i>Vi aspetterò IN piázza.</i>
Ungrateful people write benefits upon the sand,	<i>Gl' ingrátì scrivono i benefizi NELL' aréna.</i>
To have no money upon (or about) you,	<i>Non avére danári IN dóssò.</i>

BETWEEN, AMONG.

II. These prepositions are rendered by *fra* or *tra*, and occasionally by *infra* or *intra*; as, —

Among the people,	<i>FRA (OR TRA) il pópolo.</i>
Among men,	<i>FRA (OR TRA) gli uómini.</i>
Between these two cities you find three villages,	<i>FRA quése due città s' incóntrano tre paesétti.</i>

III. *Fra* (or *tra*) sometimes expresses "in" or "within;" as, —

I said within myself,	<i>Io dicéva FRA me.</i>
God has created the world in six days,	<i>Dío ha creáto il móndo IN séi giòrni.</i>
He will arrive within two months,	<i>Égli arriverà FRA due mési.</i>
To live in pleasure, in pain,	<i>Vivére FRA i piacéri, FRA le péne.</i>

UNTIL.

IV. "Until" is translated by *fino* or *sino*; also *insino* or *infino*.

TO or AT.

V. "To" or "at" is rendered by *da* when it signifies going to some one; as, —

I go to my banker's,	<i>Io vo DAL mio banchiére.</i>
You go to your uncle's,	<i>Vói andáte DA vóstro zio.</i>
He will send to the baker,	<i>Manderà DAL fornáio.</i>
Yesterday I went to your house to beg you to call upon me to-day,	<i>Iéri vénni DA vói per pregárvì di passáre óggi DA me.</i>

A casa di; a casa mia, a casa vostra, etc., are also used when we refer more particularly to the house; as, *Voi andate a casa di vostro zio; ieri venni a casa vostra perregarvi di passare oggi a casa mia.*

VI. The following examples illustrate the use of various prepositions:—

At the fireside,	ACCANTO <i>al fuoco.</i>
After dinner,	DOPPO <i>pranzo.</i>
After me,	DOPPO <i>di me.</i>
About the table,	INTORNO <i>alla tavola.</i>
Against me, him,	CONTRO <i>di me, di lui.</i>
Against the enemy,	CONTRO <i>al nemico.</i>
About 3,000 francs,	CIRCA <i>a tre mila franchi.</i>
About three feet high,	ALTO CIRCA, or ALTO INTORNO <i>a tre piedi.</i>
Along the river,	LUNGO <i>il fiume.</i>
According to your opinion,	SECONDO, or GIUSTA <i>al vostra parere.</i>
Before all, before me,	PRIMA <i>di tutto, prima di me.</i>
Before speaking,	PRIMA <i>di, or AVANTI di parlare.</i>
Before daylight,	INNANZI <i>l'alba, or PRIMA dell'alba.</i>
Beyond the sea,	AL DI LA <i>dal mare.</i>
Behind the door,	DIETRO <i>la porta, or alla porta.</i>
Before the chimney,	DAVANTI <i>il, or al cammino.</i>
Beyond the Rhine,	DI QUÀ <i>dal Reno.</i>
Beside that,	OLTRE <i>a ciò.</i>
Far from the truth,	LUNGI, or LONTANO <i>dal vero.</i>
In the middle of the street,	IN MEZZO <i>alla, or della strada.</i>
In face of, or opposite to,	DIRIMPETTO A, or IN FACCIA A.
Near the bed,	ACCANTO, or VICINO <i>al letto.</i>
Near the sea,	VICINO, or PRESSO <i>al or del mare.</i>
Outside,	PER DI FUORI, or AL DI FUORI.
Out of the house,	FUORI or FUORA <i>di casa.</i>
Towards me, thee,	VÉRSO or INVERSO <i>a me, a te, or di me.</i>
Towards spring,	VÉRSO <i>primavera.</i>
Without money,	SENZA <i>danaro.</i>
Within him,	DENTRO, or PER DI DENTRO, <i>di lui.</i>

VII. When the above prepositions are followed by a personal pronoun, the pronoun is often placed before the verb, and the preposition terminates the phrase; as, *Non mi comparite più dinanzi*, appear no more before me.

READING LESSON.

Tasso's last Letter

Che dirà il mío Signór António, quándo udirà la mórte del
will say will hear
súo Tásso? e per mío avviso nón tarderà móltó la novélla, perchè
will not delay
io mi sénto al fine délla mía víta, non esséndosi potúto trovár
feel being able
mái rimédio a quéstá mía fastidiósa indisposizióne sopravvenúta
alle mólte áltre mie sólite, quási rápido torrén-te, dal quále sénza
accustomed
potére avér alcún ritégno védo chiaramén-te ésser rapíto. Non è
defence taken away.
tém-po che io párli délla mía ostináta fortúna, per non díre dell'
speak
ingrati-tú-dine del móndo, la quále ha pur volúto avér la vittória
di condúrmi álla sepoltúra mendíco; quánd ío pensáva, ché quélla
glória, che, mal grádo di chi non vuóle, avrà quéstó sécolo da miéi
scrítti, non fósse per lasciármí in alcún módo sénza guiderdóne.
Mi son fáto condúrre in quéstó Monastéro di Sant' Onófrio, non
to conduct
sólo perchè l' ária è lodáta da' médici, più che d'alcún' áltra
praised
párte di Róma, ma quási per cominciáre da quéstó luógo emi-
nénte, e cólla conversazióne di quésti divóti Pádri, la mía con-
versazióne in Ciélo. Pregáte Iddío per me: e siáte sicúro che
siccóme vi ho amáto, ed onoráto sémpre nélla presén-te víta, cosí
farò per voi nell' áltra più véra, ciò che álla non fínta, ma ve-
will do feigned
ráce carità s' appartíene; ed álla Divína grázia raccomándó vói,
belongs
e me stéssó. Di Róma in Sant' Onófrio.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. The tears of an inheritor are smiles concealed under a mask.
2. Distrust those who love you very much on short acquaintance.

3. Private thieves spend their lives in chains and prisons; public thieves, in the midst of purple and gold.

4. With many people, love of country is none other than to kill and despoil other men.

5. There are some country towns in France where societies meet at six o'clock in the evening, in winter. They seat themselves around the fireplace; and, after the usual compliments, each one goes to sleep. At eight o'clock, one of them sneezes. Then, there is a general movement of surprise. "What is it?" — "Nothing." One of the company takes out his watch, and announces that it is eight o'clock. "Ah! it is not late: we can amuse ourselves a little longer." They sleep again till nine o'clock, when the mistress of the house gives a signal. They rise; they congratulate each other at having been much amused; and each one goes to his own home.

6. "Wit and judgment," says Pope, "are always in opposition to each other, as the husband and wife; although made to live together, and mutually help each other."

7. A preacher displayed all his eloquence in a panegyric upon St. Antonio; and, among the figures of rhetoric with which he embellished his style, there was one wherein he said, "Among what inhabitants of heaven shall I place our saint? Shall it be with angels or archangels? shall it be with cherubims or seraphims? No! Shall I place him among patriarchs, among prophets? No! Neither shall I place him among apostles, nor doctors, nor evangelists." One of his auditors, who was tired of this long declamation, said to him, in rising, "My father, if you do not know where to place your saint, you can put him here; because I am going away."

VOCABULARY.

1. Concealed (which they conceal), *nascóndono*.
2. Distrust, *difidótevi*; love very much, *vógliono grán bene*.
3. Private, *priváto*; spend (pass), *pássano*.
4. Is none other than, *non è áltro che*; kill, *ammazzáre*; despoil, *spogliáre*.
5. There are, *vi sòno*; societies meet, *si va in conversazióne*; at six o'clock, P.M., *alle séi pomeridiáne*; usual, *sóliti*; there is

a general movement, *insorge un móto generále*; takes out, *cáva*; it is not late, *non e túrdi*; to amuse, *trattenére*; they sleep again, *ognúno tórnu ad adormentársi*; they rise *tutti si álzano*; they congratulate each other, *si rallégrano*.

6. Although made, *benchè fátti*; to live together, *tenérsi compagnia*; to help, *aiutáre*.

7. Displayed, *sfoggiáva*; to embellish, *ornáre*; to place, *collocáre*; neither, *neppure*; declamation, *filastrócca*; if you do not know, *se non sapéte*; you can put him here, *ponételo pur quì*; because, *chè*; I am going away, *io vado vía*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Che cósa avéte?

Díte dà véro, o díte da búrla?

Dov' è il mio páne (roll) imbutirráto (buttered)?

Che fétero (do) quéi poveríni cólle lágrime in súgli ócchi?

Fra quáli déi celéstí abitatóri fu collocáto Sant' António?

Ho io lasciáto (left) il mio bastóne quì?

Chi è felice?

Qual è quell' animále, che va (goes) con quáttro piédi, pói con due, ed in último con tre?

Una bottiglia di víno.

Da véro; non ischérzo.

Non so, vado nêlla cucína per cercárló.

Chiéséro aiúto col piánto e cólle strída.

Amíco mío, non è importánte di saperlo.

Vói lo lasciáste da mia sorélla.

Vói ed ío, perchè non ci mánca (fails) un amíco sincéro.

È l' uómo, che da bambíno va carpóni con le máni e có piédi, e cósi con quáttro piédi, pói rítto su due piédi, ed in vecchiója con tre, perchè va col bastóne.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE VERBS *ÈSSERE* AND *AVÈRE*.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Non c' è témpo da pérdere,</i>	There is no time to lose.
<i>Non c' è cárne senz' óssa,</i>	There is no meat without bones.
<i>Avéte vói in prónto la monéta?</i>	Have you the money ready?
<i>Non bisógna avérsela a mále,</i>	You must not take it ill.
<i>Io v' ho cára quánto sorélla,</i>	I cherish you as a sister.
<i>Perchè avéte cosí frétta?</i>	Why are you in such a hurry?
<i>Compráte délla légna; perchè in</i> <i>cantína non ce n' è più,</i>	Buy more wood; for there is no more in the cellar.
<i>Se non avéte che fàre, veníte</i> <i>méco,</i>	If you have nothing to do, come with me.
<i>Tócça a vói a copríre i miéi</i> <i>difétti,</i>	It is for you to conceal my faults.
<i>Óra toccherà a me a raccon-</i> <i>ciárlu,¹</i>	Now it is my turn to adjust the affair.
<i>Non ho piacére di viaggiáre di</i> <i>nótte,¹</i>	I feel no pleasure travelling by night.
<i>Con chi l' avéte? Io non l' ho</i> <i>con nessúno,</i>	With whom are you displeased? I am displeased with no one.
<i>Vi sòno grán ribáldi in quéstó</i> <i>móndo,</i>	There are great villains in this world.
<i>Non si può dáre un cuóre più</i> <i>perfído,</i>	There cannot be a more per- fidious heart.
<i>Abbiamo a discórrere a quáttro</i> <i>ócchi,¹</i>	We must speak of that to- gether.
<i>Ho incontráto dúe giórni fa</i> <i>vóstro cugíno,</i>	Two days ago I met your cous- in.
<i>I béni del móndo sòno in méno</i> <i>délla sórte,</i>	The riches of this world are in the hands of fate.
<i>A vói tócca il dir prima il vós-</i> <i>tro parére,¹</i>	It is for you to give your ad- vice first.
<i>Égli non è in grádo di fár quéstá</i> <i>spésa,</i>	He is not in a position to in- cur this expense.

ÉSSERE, TO BE.

I. This verb is very much used in Italian, by its forming the passive, which predominates in that language. 1st, It is its own auxiliary in compound tenses; as, *Io sono stato*, I have been: 2d, The past participle *stato* agrees in gender and number with its subject; as, *Élla è stata*, she has been; *noi siamo stati*, we have been.

II. When *essere* is used impersonally, it agrees with the subject which follows it; as, *È un ora*, it is one o'clock; *sono le undici*, it is eleven o'clock.

III. The verb *venire* is very often used for *essere*.

IV. The Italian expression *essere per*, or *stare per*, signifies "to be upon the point of;" as, *Io sono*, or *io sto per ammogliarmi*, I am about to marry.

V. In the phrases "there is," "there are," "there was," etc., the Italians use *ci* and *vi* (there), abridged from *quinci* and *quivi*. *Ci* denotes proximity, and *vi* a more distant place; as, —

There is, was, etc.,

There are many people who wish to learn much without study;

V'è, or *c'è*; *v'era*, or *c'era*, etc.

Vi sono molti che vorrebbero imparare molto senza studiare.

VI. *Ci* and *vi* are changed into *ce* and *ve* when it is necessary to use the indefinite pronoun *ne* (of it, of them), etc.; as, —

Non ce n'è più, or *non ve n'è più*, There are no more of them.
Non ce n'è più, etc., There is no more of it.

VII. To express "it is ten years since," etc., the Italians say, "*Dieci anni fa*, or *dieci anni sono*; and for "it is an hour," "a week," "a month," "two centuries," etc., they say *un' ora fa*, *una settimana fa*, *un mese fa*, *due secoli fa*. "There is," "there are," is occasionally rendered by *vi ha*, or *havvi*.

VIII. *Avére* (to have), besides being the auxiliary of active verbs as in English, is used idiomatically in the following phrases : —

To be judicious,	<i>Avér giudízio ; avér cervéllo.</i>
To be ready,	<i>Avére in prònto ; avére a máno.</i>
To be thirsty,	<i>Avér sète.</i>
To be hungry,	<i>Avér fàme.</i>
To be hot,	<i>Avér càllo.</i>
To be satisfied with,	<i>Avér càro di.</i>
To cherish some one,	<i>Avér càro úno.</i>
To remember,	<i>Avére a mènte.</i>
To be in a hurry,	<i>Avér frétta.</i>
To be cold,	<i>Avér frèddo.</i>
To be ill,	<i>Avér mále.</i>
To be ashamed,	<i>Avér vergógna.</i>
To take a thing ill,	<i>Avér per mále.</i>
To be afraid,	<i>Avér paura.</i>
To be charmed,	<i>Avér gústo ; avér piacére.</i>
To be in possession of,	<i>Avére in máno.</i>
To have knowledge of,	<i>Avére conoscénza.</i>

READING LESSON.

Sedúta un po' in dispárte, cólla frònte bàssa e le máni intrecciáte sùlle ginócchia, stáva piangéndo chéta, la póvera Laudómia. Le sùe guáncie in quèsti mési s' éran affiláte e fátte pállide, che quel vivér sèmpre in agitazióne, quel dovér ad ógni óra temére le giungésse l' avvisó che Lambérto éra rimásto uccíso, esauríva in léi a póco a póco la víta. Ed óra, dópo quèsta róttà, délla quále s' ignorávano i particolári, ed in cúi si sapéva però quási 3,000 persóne avér perdúta la víta, rimanér col treméndo dúbbio s' égli fósse vivo o mórtó! Non avér módo di uscírne, non sapére a chi domandárne! "Oh! pensíamo," dicéva, "s' égli non si sarà gettáto nel maggiór pericólo! s' égli avrà volúto staccársi dal fianco del Ferrúccio! Oimè! Oimè! ch' io non ábbia próprio a vedérlo mái più?"

Le cognáte, le nipóti e gli álti tútti dj quélle tre cásce che formávano úna sóla famíglia, la venerávano più che sorélla e zía, e la chiamávano l' Améda, nóme antíco, venúto dal latíno Amita (che vùol dír zía), e tuttóra vivo nel contádo délla Briánza.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. There was in Athens a very opulent miser, who troubled himself very little about being the talk of his fellow-citizens. "People may hiss me," said he; "but I am not angry: for, when I am at home, I rejoice at the sight of my crowns."

2. Wherever there are tears to be dried up, you will be sure to meet a woman."

3. There are men on whom is imprinted the whole character of their nation.

4. Unhappily, it is but too true, that no nation can flourish without vices. If it were not for ambition or cupidity, there would not be a single man who would wish to take charge of the government of others. Take vanity away from women, and the fine manufactures of silk and lace, which furnish labor (cause to live) to so many thousands of artisans, would cease (would be no more). If there were no thieves, lock-makers would die of hunger. Thus good and evil are always found together.

5. Always live as if you were old, in order that you may never repent having been young.

6. There are men who know neither how to speak nor to be silent.

7. An old woman asked Mahomet what it was necessary to do so as to go to Paradise. "My dear," said he, "Paradise is not for old women." The good woman began to weep; and the prophet said, to console her, "There are no old women there, because they all become young again."

8. Dolabella said to Cicero, "Do you know that I am only thirty years old?" — "I ought to know it," said Cicero; "because you have been telling it to me these ten years."

9. If princes were obliged to combat hand to hand, there would be no more wars.

VOCABULARY.

1. *Atene*; who troubled himself very little, *che si dáva póca bríga*; hiss, *fa le fischiáte*; I rejoice, *mi rallégro*.

2. Wherever, *dovúnque*; to dry, *asciugáre*.

3. Imprinted, *impréssò*.

4. Unhappily, etc., *è còsa disgraziataménte pur véra*; can flourish, *può ésser flórida*; if it were not, *se non fósse*; would wish, *avésse vóglia di*; to take charge, *incaricársi*; take away, *togliéte vía*; manufacture, *fabbrica*; cause to live, *dánno da vivere a*; would die, *morirébbéro*.

5. If you were, *se fòste* ; may never repent, *vi abbiáte a pen-tíra mái*.

6. To be silent, *stáre zítì*.

7. Old woman, *vécchia* ; asked, *domandáva* ; *Inaométto* ; it was necessary, *convenisse* ; to go, *per andáre* ; *paradiso* ; my dear, *cára mia* ; began to weep, *si cacciò a piángere* ; to console, *racconsoláre* ; become young, *ritorneránno giòvani*.

8. *Dolabélla* ; *Ciceróne* ; only, *solaménte* ; I ought to know it, *io débbo sapére* ; because, *porchè* ; telling, *andáte dicéndo*.

9. Were obliged to, *dovéssero* ; combat, *pugnáre* ; hand to hand, *a córpo a córpo*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Dov' è la Luísa ?

Perchè ?

Louísa, che hai ?

Che cosa ha ?

Bevéte (drink). È dólce abbas-tánza ?

Che cos' è quèsta nóstra vita !

Quánti ánni sòno che siéte fuóri di pátria ?

Figliuóli miéi, avéte appetíto ?

Voléte (will you) bére (drink) ?

È mórtá la Signóra ?

È la Giuliétta.

Avéte studiáto la vóstra lezióne di música ? Avéte fáto eser-cízio ?

Potrèi (could I) vedér-la ?

È rimásta a cósa.

Perchè è un póco infreddáta.

La mámma stà (is) mále.

Ha úna gróssa fébbre.

Sì, è buoníssimo.

Un sógno, sognámo in páce.

Sòno ormái quíndici ánni ?

No, cára mádre.

Prenderémo (we will take) úna limonáta.

Sì, la Signóra María è mórtá.

È desoláta. Il súo vívo dolóre mi lácera (pierces) l' ánimó.

Mi son leváto quèsta mattína álle sétte, e non mi sòno più móssa (moved) dal piano-fórte.

Sì ; se voléte entráre un mo-ménto, ma non le dite (say) núlla.

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE VERBS AND THEIR SYNTAX.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Cóme ve la passáte, caríno ?</i>	How goes it with you, dear ?
<i>Io sto ascoltándo: non mi muóvo,</i>	I listen : I do not move.
<i>Amico, gettáte vía la fatica,</i>	Friend, you lose your labor.
<i>Veníte púre avánti,</i>	You can likewise enter.
<i>Che cosa díte ?</i>	What do you say ?
<i>Tírate vía, gocciolóne !</i>	Go away, great fool !
<i>Io stáva scrívéndo úna léttera,</i>	I was about writing a letter.
<i>Comportátevi béne, e saréte ben volúto da tútti,</i>	Behave well, and everybody will wish you well.
<i>Da alcúni filósofi si créde che la víta sía un sógno,</i>	Some philosophers believe that life is a dream.
<i>Vi sóno talúni che vánno sémpre macchinándo délle novità,</i>	There are people always occupied in manufacturing news.
<i>Che cosa impedisce all' uómo di esser felice ?</i>	What prevents man from being happy ?
<i>Pióve, tuóná, e baléna, in un púnto,</i>	It rains, thunders, and lightens, all at once.
<i>Méntre státe pranzándo scriverò állo zío,</i>	While you dine, I will write to my uncle.
<i>Che andáte facéndo cosí per témpo ?</i>	What are you doing so early ?
<i>Non parlár mái sénza avér pensáto,</i>	Never speak without reflection.
<i>È cosa che si díce da alcúni,</i>	There are some persons who speak of it.
<i>Muóve più l' interésse próprio che l' altrúí,</i>	One's own interest is always more touching than that of others.
<i>Non ho godúto un' óra di béne,</i>	I have never enjoyed a moment's happiness.
<i>Appéna mi víde tirò vía úbito,</i>	He no sooner saw me than he ran away.

The verbs in the infinitive are easily recognized in Italian by their terminations, namely, in ARE, ERE, IRE; as, *amâre*,* to love; *vedêre*, to see; *finîre*, to finish. Many verbs have two terminations for the infinitive: some end in *ere* or *ire*.

In Italian, the infinitive, when preceded by the definite article, has the nature of a noun; as, *È proibito il far mâle*, it is forbidden to do evil.

GENERAL RULES.

I. The word *vía* (which signifies "way," "street") is placed after certain verbs of motion; as, —

<i>Levâr vîa,</i>	to take away.
<i>Portâr vîa,</i>	to carry away.
<i>Andâr vîa,</i>	to go away, etc.

II. The passive form of the verb, as we have already stated, is much used in Italian; particularly in didactic, poetic, and historic styles. The active form becomes passive by changing the construction of the phrase: the subject becomes the regimen, and takes the preposition *da*: the verb takes the addition of *si*, which is a sign of the passive; or it is conjugated through all its tenses with the verbs *essere* or *venîre*; as, Everybody says, *si dice da tutti, è dëtto da tutti*, or *viên dëtto da tutti*; the people fear war, *la guérra è temûta dal pópolo*.

III. There are many impersonal verbs † in Italian; among which are the following:—

<i>Albéggia,</i>	the day appears.	} it drizzles: it rains in small drops.
<i>Raggióvna,</i>	" " "	
<i>Annóttâ,</i>	it is growing dark.	
		<i>Piovíggina,</i>
		<i>Lámica,</i>
		<i>Sprúzzola,</i>

* The verbs of the first conjugation — which ends in ARE — amount to more than four thousand: among them, only about thirty are irregular.

† The impersonal verbs may be divided into proper and improper. The proper are those which have only the third person singular throughout all their moods and tenses; as, *Si fa oscûro*, it grows dark; *tempêsta*, it hails. The improper are those which are not impersonal by themselves, but only occasionally used in an impersonal signification; as, *Convîene*, it is proper; *bisógna*, it must.

<i>Balena,</i>	it lightens.	<i>Accade,</i>	it happens.
<i>Lampéggia,</i>	" "	<i>Avviene,</i>	" "
<i>Piöve,</i>	it rains.	<i>Interviene,</i>	" "
<i>Névica,</i>	it snows.	<i>Päre,</i>	it appears.
<i>Tuóna,</i>	it thunders.	<i>Sembra,</i>	it seems.
<i>Grándina,</i>	it hails.	<i>Disdice,</i>	it does not become.
<i>Géla,</i>	it freezes.	<i>Bisógna,</i>	it is necessary.

IV. Impersonal verbs are used in the plural when the noun which follows them is plural ; as, —

<i>Accádono stráne cöse,</i>	Strange things happen.
<i>Sóno le séi,</i>	It is six o'clock.

V. All the impersonal verbs are conjugated in their compound tenses with *essere* ; as, *E' tonáto, è piovúto.*

VI. Many of these verbs are conjugated with the personal pronouns ; as, *Mi páre,* it seems to me ; *mi dispiáce,* I am sorry.

REMARK. — In most languages, many verbs are used with an idiomatic turn very different from their proper signification.

VII. The verbs *veníre* and *volére*, for instance, do not always answer to the English verbs "to come" and "to be willing : " but the former is sometimes used instead of the verb *essere* (to be) ; and the latter, being preceded by the particles *ci, vi,* and unipersonally employed, has the same meaning as the verb *bisognáre* (must or to be necessary) ; as, —

<i>Mi vién détto così,</i>	I am told so.
<i>Ci vuól paziénza,</i>	We must have patience.

VIII. The verb *dovére* is expressed in English by the verb "to owe" when it means *to be a debtor*, and by the verb "to be obliged" when it signifies *duty* or the necessity of doing an action. It is also used instead of the verb *bisognáre*, in the signification of "must ; " as, *E' gli dovéva trecénto fioríni,* he owed him three hundred florins.

IX. The English verb "to be," used in the sense of "to be one's turn," "business," or "duty," is rendered in Italian by the verb *toccare*, in the signification of "to belong;" as, —

<i>Tocca a me a giuocare,</i>	It is for me to play.
<i>Tocca a lui a leggere,</i>	It is for him to read.

X. The verb "to think," used in English in the sense of "to believe" or "to suppose," is translated into Italian by the verb *credere*; and, when in the sense of "to reflect" or "meditate," by the verb *pensare*.

XI. The verb "to know" is translated by the verb *sapere* when intellectual knowledge is meant, and by the verb *conoscere* when personal knowledge derived from the evidence of one of our senses is intended.

XII. The pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *ne*, etc., are often used as expletives* with certain verbs; as, *Io mi son presa la libertà di scrivervi*, I have taken the liberty to write to you.

XIII. The verbs *dovere*, *potere*, *sapere*, *volere*, form their compound tenses with *essere* when followed by an infinitive; as, *Io non son potuto venire*.

XIV. The verb *suonare*, or *sonare*, is used in the sense of to play on an instrument; as, *Suona il violino, suona il corno da caccia*.

XV. The verbs *avvertire* and *badare* (to take care) are followed by a negation; as, *Avvertite or badate di non ingannarvi*, take care not to deceive yourself.

XVI. The verb may be placed before or after the subject, according to the dominant idea of either verb or

* Expletives are particles which give strength and energy. They are *b'ne*, *si b'ne*, *père*, *tutto*, *mi*, *ti*, *pòi*, *altrimenti*, *ci*, *già*, *via*, *vi*, *mai*, *egli*, *si*, *bello*, *non*, *ne*; as, —

<i>Il vostro vestito è bell' e fatto,</i>	Your suit of clothes is finished.
<i>Son tutto stanco.</i>	I am tired.
<i>Che tempo fa egli?</i>	What is the weather?
<i>Egli è più dotto ch'io non credèva,</i>	He is more learned than I thought.

subject. This inversion sometimes gives great effect, particularly to poetry. We may see it in Tasso : —

GIACE l'álta Cartágo; appéna i ségni
Dell'álte súe ruíne il l'ido sérba,
MUÓIONO le città; muóiono i régni, etc.

REMARKS.

1. The verbs ending in CARE and GARE, as *predicáre*, *spiegáre*, take *h* in those tenses in which *c* and *g* would precede *e* or *i*, so as to preserve the hard sound of the infinitive. (See conjugation of *cercáre*.)

2. Students should be careful to notice the difference between the imperfect and perfect-definite tenses of Italian verbs. The *imperfect* expresses an action not accomplished during the time of another past action; or the repetition of an action, and may be known by its making sense with the auxiliary *was*. The *perfect-definite* expresses an action entirely past; as, I *was going* to your sister when I *saw* you, *io me ne* (imp.) ANDÁVA da vóstra sorélla, *quándo io vi* (perfect) VIDI; I *went* almost every night to pay a visit to the famous Schiller, *io* ANDÁVA *quási ógni séra a far visita al célebre Schiller*.

READING LESSON.

Éra intánto compársa la Caterína con 'quálche cosarélla per céna: e chi non avésse sapúto che la cása éra andáta a sácco, l'avrébbe indovináto vedéndo quél' imbandigióne, che tútta consistéva in un' insaláta, un pézzo di cácio, e dúe pan néri, che l'úno neppúr éra intéro. La póvera dónna, scúra e macilénta in viso, cógli ócchi gónfi e róssi, apparecchiáva sénza parláre, e mettéva ógni tánto, lúngli sóspiri; e dópo quélle prime e brévi paróle, nessúno aprì piú bócca, e rimasér pensósi, sedéndo su úna pánca che éra tútt' in gíro confítta nel múro: e quéstó silénzio paréa tánto piú mésto, che nessúna vóce, nessúno strépito s' udíva neppúre, al di fuóri, benchè fóssero nel cuór délla térra, póco lontaní di piázza. Il cánto d' un gállo o l' abbaiár d' un cáné avrébber alméno dáto ségno di cósa víva; ma quel desoláto bórgo avéva aspétto di cimitéro. — D'AZÉLIO.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

The Stranger and the Guide (seated on the top of the Coliseum).

1. *S.* — As I just now observed, as we climbed up here, the name of Rome awakens the most agreeable sensations.

2. *G.* — It is because you have read so much, sir: besides, you know Latin, and then you have travelled much.

3. *S.* — Two years of travel have profited me much more than eight years of Latin. I have studied nature: I have freed myself from my prejudices, and from the false national love which makes us so unjust towards our fellow-creatures.

4. *G.* — What think you, then, of Italy?

5. *S.* — Italy has conquered the world by her arms; she has enlightened it by her sciences; civilized us by her fine arts; governed by her genius; and, far from succumbing under the redoubtable blows of barbarians, she has triumphed over them, forcing them to lay down their ensanguined arms at her feet.

6. *G.* — Very true; and you cannot mention another nation which has held its conquests so long as Italy.

VOCABULARY.

1. We climbed, *salivámo*; awakens, *désta*.

2. Read, *létto*; travelled, *viaggiáto*.

3. Profited, *giováto*; studied, *studiáto*; have (am) freed, *sóno spogliáto*; fellow-creatures, *simile*.

4. Think, *pensáto*.

5. Conquered, *conquistáto*; enlightened, *illumináto*; civilized, *ingentilíto*; governed, *governáto*; far from succumbing, *non che soggiacére*; triumphed, *trionfáto*; forcing (constraining them), *costringéndoli*; ensanguined, *insanguinati*.

6. You cannot mention (cite), *vossignoría non può citáre*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Avéte camére da affittáre (to let)? *Si, Signóre, ne ho várie.*

Vorréi un appartaménto.

Con móbili o sénza móbili?

Lo vorréi (should like) *smobigliáto.*

Pensáto di trattenérvi (to remain) *mólto?*

Non più che l'invéno.

E al partíre?

Al partíre rivenderò (I will sell again) *la mobíglia.*

Non ne caveréte un térzo del cósto.

*Allora è meglio trováre una
buóna padróna ed un bell'
appartaménto.*

Andiámo a vedére.

Che móbili ha élla?

*Il létto è la cósá principalíssi-
ma.*

*La cámera rispónde súlla strá-
da?*

*Desidera vedére un' áltra stán-
za?*

Che si dice dell' ostinazióne?

Che ci vuóle in tutte le cósé?

Quándo è più lucído il sóle?

Che voléte amíco mío?

*Che bisógna fáre per godére
buóna salúte?*

Che sta facéndo quést' uómo?

Che cósá è pazzía?

*Vi condurrò io dulla Signóra
Bianca; elle è persóna gen-
tilíssima e discréta.*

La situazióne è bellíssima.

*Ha móbili di mógano (mahog-
any), e tappéti di lússó.*

*Non potéte desiderárne un migli-
óre.*

No Signóre, da nel giardíno.

No, crédo che il létto sia buóno.

*Non si tratta adéssó che del
prézzo.*

*Si dice che l' ostinazióne è peg-
giór di tutti i peccáti.*

*In tutte le cósé ci vuóle la mo-
derazióne.*

*Dópo una burrásca è sémpre
più lucído il sóle.*

*Vóglío più che vói potéte dár-
mi.*

Bisógna vivere parcaménte.

*Sta ragionádo per passáre il
témpo.*

*Lo sperár sémpre nell' avventúre
e pazzía.*

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE VERB: THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Gli comandò che parlasse,</i>	He ordered him to speak.
<i>Dúbito che l' óra sia tárda,</i>	I fear that it is late.
<i>Dítegli ch' égli faccia come vuole,</i>	Tell him to do as he likes.
<i>Non so se io débba dir di sì o di no,</i>	I do not know if I ought to say yes or no.
<i>Quánd' anche io lo sapéssi, non ve lo diréi,</i>	Even if I knew it, I would not tell you.
<i>Sì dà per sicúro che la páce sia fatta,</i>	We are assured that peace is made.
<i>Bisogna che gli scriviáte voi stésso,</i>	It is necessary that you write to him yourself.
<i>È il più brávo uómo ch' io ábbia mai conosciúto,</i>	He is the most honest man that I have ever known.
<i>Benchè sia diffícile, bisogna però vincere se stésso,</i>	Although it is difficult, we must conquer ourselves.
<i>Égli lo dice perchè non diáte a me la cólpa,</i>	He says it that you may not blame me.
<i>Io gli dissi che come gli piacésse le rispondésse,</i>	I told him that I would answer her as he might please.
<i>Páre ch' élla si faccia ognór più bélla,</i>	She seems to be continually growing handsomer.
<i>Gli dissi che facésse come volesse,</i>	I told him to do as he pleased.
<i>Se io avéssi studiáto, saréi dótto,</i>	If I had studied, I should be learned.
<i>Può éssere ch' io páрта dománi,</i>	It is possible that I may leave to-morrow.
<i>Se tu sapéssi quánto io t'ámo!</i>	If thou knewest how much I love thee!
<i>Vénne da me e mi domandò chi fossi, e dóve andássi,</i>	He came to me, and asked me who I was, and where I was going.

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Every proposition is either positive or doubtful.

I. The positive indicates that the thing positively exists ; that the action is done in an absolute manner. This proposition is expressed by the *indicative* mood ; as, *Io parlo*, I speak ; *io parlava*, I was speaking.

II. The doubtful proposition, on the contrary, is expressed by the subjunctive mood, and serves to indicate the possibility or doubt of a thing existing : it shows that the existence of the action is conditional and relative, because it depends on an antecedent proposition, expressed or understood ; as, I wish to write, *io vóglío scrivere*, is positive, and in the indicative mood ; I wish that you would write, *io vóglío che voi scriviáte*, is doubtful, depending on the will of another, and therefore put in the subjunctive.

III. The verb is used in the subjunctive after all verbs that signify *asking, entreating, suspecting, wondering, rejoicing, grudging, supposing, hoping, imagining, conjecturing, intimating* ; after all verbs expressive of *desire, will, command, permission, prohibition, fear, belief* ; after all verbs implying *doubt, ignorance, uncertainty, or future action* ; and after all verbs used with a negative ; as, —

<i>Per amor di te ti prégo (che)</i>	For your sake, I beseech you
<i>te ne rimángi,</i>	to desist.
<i>Che vuoi tu ch' io sappia?</i>	What do you think that I know?

IV. Some of these verbs, however, appear sometimes to be used indiscriminately, either in the indicative or in the subjunctive mood : but it is not so in fact ; for, when they are so used, each mood expresses the action in a different manner, as may be seen in the following examples : —

<i>Voglio sposare una donna che mi piace,</i>	I wish to marry a woman who pleases me.
<i>Voglio sposare una donna che mi piaccia,</i>	I wish to marry a woman who may please me.
<i>Vado cercando uno che mi vuol bene,</i>	I am seeking one who wishes me well.
<i>Vado cercando uno che mi voglia bene,</i>	I am seeking one who may wish me well.

In which, in the first instance, being certain of the existence of the action expressed, we use the indicative; and, in the second, we use the subjunctive, because the existence of the action is not certain, but doubted or desired.

V. After *sembrare*, *parere*, *bisognare*, or any other impersonal verb, the subjunctive is always used; as, —

<i>Bisogna che voi partiate domani,</i>	You must go away to-morrow.
<i>Mi sembrava che avesse voglia di ridere,</i>	He appeared as if he had a wish to laugh.
<i>Parévami che ella fosse più bianca che la neve,</i>	She appeared to me to be whiter than snow.

VI. The verb is also used in the subjunctive after the relative pronoun *che*, following a comparative or a superlative; as, —

<i>Bella quánt' altra donna (che) fosse mai in Firenze,</i>	As handsome as any other lady in Florence ever was.
<i>È la migliore opera che sia comparsa,</i>	It is the best work which ever appeared.

VII. And after the relative *quale*, not used in an interrogative manner; as, —

<i>Una parte quale volésse ne regerebbe,</i>	He might govern such a part as he should wish.
--	--

OF THE TENSES OF THE DEPENDENT VERBS IN A COMPOUND SENTENCE.

VIII. When, in a compound sentence, the principal verb is in the present of the indicative, or in the future, the dependent verb must be put in the *present* of the

subjunctive, if we mean to imply the present or future time; and in the *imperfect* of the subjunctive, if we mean to imply the past; as, —

<i>Crédo mi portásse amóre,</i>	I believe that he loved me.
<i>Io crédo omái che mónti e piág-</i>	I believe, that, by this time,
<i>ge sappian di che témpra sia</i>	mountains and plains know
<i>la mia víta,</i>	what is the condition of my
	life.

IX. When the dependent verb expresses an action which may be done at all times, it may be put either in the *imperfect* or the *present* of the *subjunctive*, although the principal verb be in the perfect-indefinite of the *indicative*; as, —

<i>Iddio ci à dato la ragióne affin-</i>	God gave us reason in order
<i>chè ci distinguiámo, or ci dis-</i>	that we might distinguish
<i>tinguéssimo, dagli animáli,</i>	ourselves from animals.

X. In suppositive or conditional phrases, the *imperfect* of the *indicative* in English — *had, was, or were* — is rendered in Italian by the *imperfect of the subjunctive*; as, —

<i>Se io avéssi quésti denári, gliéli</i>	If I had this money, I would
<i>presteréi incontanénte,</i>	lend it to you immediately.
<i>Chi starébbe méglío di me, se</i>	Who would be more happy than
<i>quéi denári fosser miéi?</i>	I, if that money was mine?

REMARK. — Some conjunctions require the subjunctive mood; as, *Affinchè*, in order that; *benchè*, though; *senza chè*, without; *dato chè*, suppose.

READING LESSON.

È cósá rára che s'incóntri un giureconsúlto che litighi, un médico che prénda medicína, e un teólogo che sía buón cristíano.

Flechier éra figlio d'un droghiere. Dicono che in un moménto di malavógliá, un véscovo gli rimproverásse la viltà dei suói natáli, e che Flechier gli rispondésse: Monsignóre, v'è quéstá differénza fra vói e me, che se vói fóste náto nélla bottéga di mío pádre vi saréste ancóra.

Tre giòrni dópo la mórté di Caterína di Fráncia, il predicatoré Lincestre cosí dall'álto del pérغامo la raccomandáva agli

astánti: "La Regína mádre è mórtá, la quále, vivéndo, féce móltó, mále, e per me crédo móltó più mále che béne. In quést' óggi si presénta úna difficoltà, che consiste in sapére se la chiésa cattólíca déva pregáre per léi che vísse tánto mále, e cosí spésso sosténne la eresía, quantúnque si díca che in último síá státa con nói, e non ábbia acconsentíto álla mórté déi nóstri príncipi. Su dí che ío dévo dírví, che se voléte recitárlé un páter ed áve cosí a casáccio, fáte vói; varrà per quéllo che può valére: e lo rimétto alla vóstra libertà."

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. As a countryman was one day walking in the streets of Paris, he passed by a broker's shop; and, not seeing any thing but a man occupied in writing, he was anxious to know what business he did. He entered, and asked what they sold. "Asses' heads," answered the money-changer. "You must do good business," immediately replied the countryman, "since you have only your own left."

2. Semiramis ordered the following inscription to be engraved upon her tomb: "Let the king who has need of money demolish this tomb, and he will find a treasure." Darius caused the tomb to be opened: instead of money, he found this other inscription: "If thou hadst not been a bad man, and of insatiable avarice, thou wouldst not have disturbed the ashes of the dead."

3. A Turkish ambassador asked Lorénzo de Medecis why they did not see as many fools in Florence as in Cairo. Lorenzo pointed to a monastery, and said, "See where we shut them up."

4. A man having consulted the philosopher Bias, to know if he should marry, or lead a life of celibacy, he answered, "The woman you marry will be pretty or homely: if she is pretty, you will marry a Helen; if she is homely, you will marry a Fury: so you would do better not to marry."

VOCABULARY.

1. Was walking, *girándo*; passed, *passò*; seeing, *scorgéndo*; was anxious to know, *ebbe voglia di*, etc.; did, *facésse*; entered, *entrò*; sold, *vendésse*; you must do, etc., *ne abbíate un gran consúmo*; left (remains), *rimáne*.

2. Demolish (make to demolish), *fáccia demolíre*; will find, *troverà*.

3. Did see, *vedéssero*; pointed, *additò*; we shut, *rinchiudiámo*.

4. Should marry (if he had to take a wife); will marry, *meneréte*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <i>Che cósà domandò égli?</i> | <i>Se io avévo ben studiáto.</i> |
| <i>Che dicéste vói?</i> | <i>Non so s'io débba dir di sí o di no.</i> |
| <i>Che voléte sapére?</i> | <i>Vóglío sapére ch' élla sía.</i> |
| <i>Quándo ritorneréte?</i> | <i>Può éssere ch' io ritórni dománi.</i> |
| <i>Chi sarébbe státo generóso se fós-</i> | <i>Il póvero che si móstra riconos-</i> |
| <i>se náto ricco?</i> | <i>cénte di un benefizio.</i> |
| <i>Che disse María?</i> | <i>Se io fossi ricca, so ben io quel</i> |
| | <i>che avréi a fúre.</i> |
| <i>Che cósà è rára?</i> | <i>È cósà rára che s' incóntri un</i> |
| | <i>médico che prénda medicína.</i> |
| <i>Perchè vi maravigliáte vói?</i> | <i>Perchè vói avéte venduto quel</i> |
| | <i>cavállo.</i> |
| <i>E se io avéssi bisógno di danáro?</i> | <i>Se sapéste quánt' io v' ámo, m'</i> |
| | <i>avréste domandáto di prestár-</i> |
| | <i>vene.</i> |

CHAPTER XXV.

THE INFINITIVE, GERUND, PRESENT AND PAST PARTICIPLES.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE,

<i>Spéssò la verità sta occulta,</i>	Truth is often concealed.
<i>Che còsa avéte sentíto díre?</i>	What have you heard said?
<i>Ho sémpre odiáto l' adulazióne,</i>	I have always hated flattery.
<i>Il fuóco è spárso in tútta la natura,</i>	Fire is spread throughout all nature.
<i>Bisógna andáre cáuto nel parláre,</i>	It is necessary to be careful in speaking.
<i>Giúnto álla pórtá, la tróvai chiúsa,</i>	When I arrived at the door, I found it shut.
<i>I Toscóni sóno acutíssimi nel motteggiáre,</i>	The Tuscans are very sharp at raillery.
<i>Al prímo vedér-la la sorprésa mi ha tradúto,</i>	Surprise betrayed me when I first saw her.
<i>Lo speráre nell' avveníre è paz-zia,</i>	It is foolish to place one's hopes on the future.
<i>La fólla crescén-te sboccáva da ógni párté,</i>	The swelling crowd poured in from all parts.
<i>Il parlár póco, il fáre assái, e'l non laudáre sé stéssò, sóno virtù ráre,</i>	To speak little, to do much, and not to praise one's self, are rare virtues.
<i>Guardáti dal vantáre le cóse tue,</i>	Be careful not to boast of thy actions.
<i>Una búr-la per éssere détta fuóri di témpo può diventáre un offésa,</i>	An untimely joke may become an offence.
<i>Si può díre quélla éssere véra árte che non appáre éssere árte,</i>	It may be said, that true art is that which does not appear to be so.
<i>Non il cominciáre, ma il perse-veráre, è dégno di lóde,</i>	It is not the commencing, but the persevering, which merits praise.

I. The infinitive takes the place of the third person when the phrase is composed of a principal proposition and a subordinate one, connected by the conjunction "that;" as, He said that the people *ought* not to be deceived, *egli dice il popolo non DOVER essere ingannato*; it is said that time is the father of all truth, *dicono il tempo ESSERE padre di ogni verità*. This style, though very elegant and much used, is not adapted for common conversation. The above phrases may be translated word for word; as, *Egli dice che il popolo non dee essere ingannato*.

II. The pronouns *lui* and *lei* are used instead of *egli* and *ella* with the infinitive; as, *Sa ognúno lui essere stato maestro di bel dire*, everybody knows that he was a model of eloquence.

III. The infinitive is used for the second person singular of the imperative mood, when preceded by the negative particle *non*; as, —

<i>Non fare strépito,</i>	Do not make a noise.
<i>Non ti lusingare,</i>	Do not flatter thyself.
<i>Ciò non temere,</i>	Do not fear that.
<i>Non mi toccare, ribaldo!</i>	Do not touch me, rascal!

IV. The infinitive may be used as a noun in the nominative case, or as regimen of the verb; as, —

<i>Mi piace molto il suo fare,</i>	His manners please me much.
<i>Nel danzare, ella non ha pari nel mondo,</i>	In dancing, she has no equal anywhere.
<i>Dal parlare si conosce l'interno degli uomini,</i>	We know the hearts of men by their speech.

V. The infinitive is used as follows by an able historian, in describing the movements of a camp preparing for an assault: *Quindi era nel campo un andare,* un*

*The Italians make frequent use of *andare*, *venire*, and *stare*: the first two convey an idea of movement; the latter, that of rest.

veníre, un urtársi d' uómini e di cárri un jorbír d' ármí, un apparecchiáre di mácchine muráli, che l' dère ne éra a mólta distánza intronáto.

VI. Many English phrases may be translated literally ; as, —

It is a great folly to live poor, *È gran pazzia il vivér póvero,*
in order to die rich, *per morir ricco.*
It is a virtue to say much in *È virtù di dir mólto in póchi*
few words, *détti.*

THE PARTICIPLES.

VII. When the past participle * is joined to the verb *essere* (to be), or to such verbs as *veníre, restáre* or *rimanére, vedérsi*, etc., used in the signification of "to be," it should agree with the subject of the verb with which it is joined, in gender and number ; as, —

Èssi éran di fróndi di quércia They were garlanded with oak-
inghirlandáti, leaves.
Nè érano le fálte de' Vitelliáni Nor were the faults of Vitel-
punite, ma ben pagáte, lius' troops punished, but
well paid.

VIII. But when the past participle is joined to the verb *avére* (to have), — if this verb is used, instead of *essere*, in the signification of "to be," or is used in the signification of "to hold," "to possess," etc., as an active and not an auxiliary verb, — the participle agrees with the object of the verb in gender and number ; as, —

S' avéa (for s' éra) mésse alcúne He had put some small stones
petrúzze in bócca, in his mouth.
Per non potérti vedére t' avrésti Thou wouldst have torn out
(for ti sarésti) caváti gli ócchi, thy eyes, not to see thyself.
Úno che foráta avéa (for tenéa, One who had his throat pierced.
possedéa) la góla;

* There are many participles in *áto, áta*, which are contracted by suppressing the *at*: these are —

Accétto — *a* for *accettáto* — *a*, accepted.
Adátto — *a* for *adattáto* — *a*, adopted.
Cárico — *a* for *caricáto* — *a*, loaded, etc.

IX. If the verb *avére*, to which the past participle is joined, is used as an auxiliary verb in order to represent the idea of past time, which could be equally expressed by a single form of the verb to which the participle belongs, then this participle remains invariable; as, —

<i>Cóme io avrò dato</i> (or <i>darò</i>)	As soon as I shall have given
<i>loro ógni cosa,</i>	every thing to them.
<i>Cercato ho</i> (or <i>cercái</i>) <i>sémpre</i>	I have always sought a solitary
<i>solitaria via,</i>	way.
<i>Chi quèste cose ha manifestato</i>	Who has told these things to
(or <i>manifestò</i>) <i>al maestro?</i>	the master?

X. When the past participle is preceded by one of the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, il, lo, la, li, gli, le, ne, che, cùi, quále, quáli, quánti*, as objects of the verb, the participle agrees with the pronouns, or the objects represented by them, in gender and number; as, —

<i>Élla medésima me le ha dette</i>	She herself has told them to
(or <i>mi ha dette quèste cose</i>),	me.
<i>Il liberto dicéva avér-la éssu uc-</i>	The freedman said that he had
<i>cisa</i> (or <i>avére éssu uccisa la</i>	killed her himself.
<i>dónna</i>),	

XI. The English present participle may be expressed in Italian, —

1. By the gerund of the corresponding verb; as, —

<i>Veggéndolo consumáre cóme la</i>	Seeing him waste away like
<i>nève al sóle,</i>	snow in the sun.
<i>Dorméndo gli páreve di vedére la</i>	(Sleeping, or) whilst he was
<i>dónna sua,</i>	asleep, it seemed to him that
	he saw his lady.

2. By the conjunction *che*, or the adverb *quándo*, and a tense of the indicative mood; as, —

<i>Pói ch' ébbi riposáto il córpo</i>	Having rested my weary body.
<i>lássò,</i>	
<i>Quánda ebbe détto ciò, riprése il</i>	Having said this, he took up
<i>téschio misero có' dénti,</i>	once more that miserable
	skull with his teeth.

3. By a preposition and the verb in the infinitive ; as, —

<i>Consumò quèlla mattina in cercarli,</i>	He spent that morning in looking after them.
<i>Crèdo che le suóre s'ien tutte a dormire,</i>	I believe that the nuns are all (sleeping or) asleep.

XII. When the English present participle has before it a preposition, such as "of," "from," "on," "in," etc., it is always rendered in Italian by the corresponding verb in the infinitive with a preposition.

XIII. If the participle is preceded by the prepositions "of," "from," "with," they are expressed in Italian by the preposition *di*, attended by the infinitive ; as, *Ébbi il piacère di vedérlo*, I had the pleasure of seeing him.

XIV. The preposition "on," before the participle, may be expressed by the prepositions *di* or *in* ; as, —

<i>Si vanta d'avér la lóro conoscenza,</i>	He values himself on being acquainted with them.
<i>Nel partíre gli sovvenne di lei,</i>	On his departure, he recollected her.

The preposition "in" is rendered by *a* or *in* ; as, —

<i>Avéa nel quietár pópolo autorità ed arte,</i>	In appeasing the people, he had both authority and art.
<i>Che a far ciò volésse aiutarlo,</i>	That he would assist him in doing that.

XV. The prepositions "for," "without," "before," "after," etc., are literally translated.

XVI. If the participle is preceded by the preposition "by," this preposition is generally omitted in Italian, and the participle rendered by the gerund of the corresponding verb ; as, —

<i>Gli scolári impáranò le régole di úna lingua studiándole,</i>	Scholars learn the rules of a language by studying them.
--	--

XVII. But if we wish to express the preposition, then the verb must be put in the infinitive, and "by" rendered by *con*; as, —

<i>Il divino Giulio rintuzzò la sedizione del suo esercito col dir sólo, "Ah, Quiriti!"</i>	The divine Julius checked the sedition of his army by only saying, "Ah, Romans!"
---	--

READING LESSON.

Dio mi creò per amare; io mi ricordo di un fanciullo sensitivo, vago di solitudine, abbandonare il trambusto della città, e lontano nei campi voltarsi indietro a contemplarla, come l'Alghieri descrive il naufrago che uscito fuori dal pélagò alla riva, si volge all'acqua perigliosa, e guata; egli si avvolgeva pei bóschi, udiva la voce arcana che par che mandi la natura al suo Creatore, ascoltava commosso l'armonia degli uccelli, ed invidiava la voce loro per cantare anch'egli un inno di gloria, e le ali per accostarsi al firmamento, perchè gli avevano detto il Padre del creato abitare nei cieli: quanto tesoro di affetto era nell'anima di quel fanciullo! Appena la campana della sera indicava l'ora dei morti, prosternato davanti alla immagine di Gesù Cristo non senza lacrime la supplicava per le anime dei suoi defunti . . . per tutti quelli che purgandosi aspettano di sollevarsi alle gioie divine: egli aveva una parola di conforto per qualunque sconcolato. Ah! quel fanciullo fui io. — GUERRAZZI.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. The ancients pretended that the greatest happiness was not to be born; and the next, to die young.

2. The Epicureans denied the existence of the soul, and recognized only physical principles: they said the gods did not enter into worldly things.

3. The philosopher Cleante earned his living by drawing water during the night, so that he might study by day (to come to study).

4. Apelles painted a bunch of grapes so natural, that several birds, seeing it, came to peck at it.

5. At Rome, a father emancipated his son by giving him a box on the ear.

6. In Paris, various academies are seen aiming at very different ends. There is the Academy of Music, which excites (moves)

the passions; and the School of Philosophy, to quiet them: the Fencing Academy, which teaches how to kill men; and the Medical Academy, to preserve life.

7. The painter Caracci, having been despoiled by certain thieves, knew so well how to delineate their physiognomy, and paint their faces, that they were discovered and arrested.

VOCABULARY.

1. Pretended, *pretendévano*; to be born, *náscere*; to die, *moríre*.

2. To deny, *negáre*; recognized, *riconóbbéro*; they said, *dicévano*.

3. Earned, *guadagnáva*.

4. Painted, *dipínse*; came, *vénnero*.

5. To emancipate, *emancipáre*; box on the ear, *schiaffo*.

6. Are seen, *védono*; moves, *muóve*; to quiet, *acchetáre*; to teach, *insegnáre*; to kill, *ammazzáre*.

7. To despoil, *spogliáre*; to designate, *disegnáre*; discovered, *scopérti*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Che negárono gli epicuréi?

Che riconóbbéro éssi?

Che dicévano?

Di chi éra Bellíni maéstro?

*Che féce il pittóre Bellíni per
Maométo secóndo?*

Ne fu conténto il suddíto?

*Cóme guadagnáva la víta il
filósofo Cleánte?*

*A chi somígliano gli uómini in
generále?*

Perchè?

Che pretendévano gli antíchi?

L' esisténza dell' ánima.

Soltánto i princípij físici.

*Dicévano gli déi non entráre
nélle cose di quésto móndo.*

Di Tiziáno.

*Égli dipínse la decollazióne di
San Giovánni Battista.*

*Lodándo la pittúra, avvertì l'
artista d' un errore.*

*Col cavár acqua in témpo di
nótte per atténdere állo stúdio
di giòrno.*

*A un miserábile príncipe do-
minánte sulle cóste délla Gui-
néa.*

*Perchè dicéva ad alcúni Fran-
cési: " Si párla mólto di me
in Fráncia?"*

*Pretendévano, la prima felicità
éssere il non náscere, la se-
cónda, il morír présto.*

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE VERBS *ANDÁRE*, *DÁRE*, *FÁRE*, AND *STÁRE*.*

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Mi rincrésce di dárvi distúrbo,</i>	I am sorry to disturb you.
<i>Fáte vísta di non inténdere,</i>	He pretended not to hear.
<i>Veníte a stáre con nói,</i>	Come to live with us.
<i>Cóme státe d' appetito?</i>	How is your appetite?
<i>A che óra siéte solito far colazió- ne?</i>	At what hour do you generally breakfast?
<i>È un ragázze che non puo stár férmo,</i>	He is a child who cannot keep still.
<i>Siámo cosí stánche che nón pos- siámo più stáre in piédi,</i>	We are so tired that we can no longer stand.
<i>Ditegli ch' égli fáccia cóme vuó- le,</i>	Tell him that he may do as he likes.
<i>Il gústó dégli uómini va soggét- to a mólte vicénde,</i>	The taste of men is liable to many changes.
<i>Égli non póse gran fáto cúra a quéllo ch' ío dísse,</i>	He did not pay much attention to what I said.
<i>Ío scélsi úna móglie secóndo il cuór mío,</i>	I took a wife after my own heart.
<i>Non fáte capitále délla súa pa- róla,</i>	Do not depend upon his word.
<i>Da nói si dà in távola álle cín- que,</i>	We dine at five at our house.
<i>Vi darò contézze del súdo státo,</i>	I will inform you of his situa- tion.
<i>Ío l' indúco quánto so e póssó, a stáre allégro e a fársi ánimo,</i>	I will induce him, as much as I can, to drive away melan- choly, and take courage.

* *Andáre*, *dáre*, *stáre*, are the only irregular verbs of the first conjugation. In some of their compounds, they become regular; as *riandáre*, *trasandáre*, etc., which are varied like *amáre*. *Fáre* is a contraction of *facére* (now obsolete), of which it retains many forms. It is considered by some grammarians as belonging to the second conjugation, and is irregular in its compounds.

ITALIANISMS WITH *ANDÁRE* (TO GO).

<i>Questa cosa non va fatta,</i>	This thing ought not to be done.
<i>Andár dietro qd uno,</i>	To follow some one.
<i>Andáre a vóto, in váno,</i>	Not to succeed.
<i>Andáre álla ventúra,</i>	To go without care.
<i>Andáre in cóllera,</i>	To get angry.
<i>Andár sicúro,</i>	To be sure.
<i>Lasciámo andáre quésto,</i>	Do not speak of that.
<i>A lúngo andáre,</i>	In the long-run.
<i>Andáre altéro,</i>	To be proud.
<i>Ío so quel che va détto,</i>	I know what I must say.
<i>Il sóle va sótto,</i>	The sun sets.
<i>Andáre béne,</i>	To succeed.
<i>Andárne la víta,</i>	To have one's life at stake.
<i>Il mérito va congiúnto cólla modestia,</i>	Merit is accompanied by modesty.
<i>Le dónne vánno trattáte con gentilezza,</i>	Women ought to be treated with courtesy.

WITH *DÁRE* (TO GIVE).

<i>Dáre a cámbio,</i>	To put out money at interest.
<i>Dáre compíménto,</i>	To finish.
<i>Dar da dormíre,</i>	To lodge.
<i>Dar da ridere,</i>	To give cause for laughter.
<i>Dáre de' cálcì,</i>	To kick.
<i>Lar féde,</i>	To believe.
<i>Dar luógo,</i>	To give an opportunity.
<i>Dar le véle a' vénti,</i>	To set sail.
<i>Dar il buón áнно,</i>	To wish a merry new-year.
<i>Dáre il mótto,</i>	To give the word.
<i>Dar la máno,</i>	To consent.
<i>Avére a dáre,</i>	To be in debt.
<i>Dársi buón témpo,</i>	To live a merry life.
<i>Dársi l'acqua ai piédi,</i>	To praise one's self.
<i>Dársi a gámbe,</i>	To run away.
<i>Dársi pensiére,</i>	To care for.
<i>Dar che díre,</i>	To give occasion to talk.
<i>Dar giù,</i>	To lose one's credit.
<i>Dáre úna vóce ad úno,</i>	To call some one.
<i>Dáre in távola,</i>	To serve the dinner.
<i>Dáre vóce,</i>	To spread a report.

WITH *FÁRE* (TO DO).

*Fáte che vènga da me,
Fáre le cárte,
Quèsto non fa per me,
Avér mólto a fáre,
Nón ne ho a fáre,
Fátevi a me,
Fársi álla finéstra,
Tre mési fa,
Una settimána fa,
Al far del giòrno,
Far bello,
Non fa fórza,
Far céрто,
Fátevi indiettro,
Far cápo ad úno,
Far del gránde,
Far fáre úno,
Fáre úna prédica,
Far víta strétta,
Far súa vòglia,
Che vi fa égli che vènga o non
vènga?*

Bid him come to me.
To deal at cards.
This will not do for me.
To be very busy.
I have no need of it.
Come near me.
To look out of the window.
Three months ago.
A week ago.
At the break of day.
To set off.
It is no matter.
To assure.
Go back.
To address some one.
To be self-important.
To cheat some one.
To admonish.
To live niggardly.
To do as one pleases.
What is it to you if he comes
or not?

WITH *STÁRE* (TO BE).

*Sto per partíre,
Qui sta il púnto,
Státe quánto vi piáce,
Dóve státe di casa?
Il tutto sta, s' égli sia buóno o no,
La cosa sta cóme vi dico,
Stáre a páne ed ácqua,
Cóme státe vói?
Égli sta béne,
Star chéto,
Stándo álla finéstra lo vídi pas-
sáre,
Sta cóme úna státua di mármo
sénza parláre,
Ditémi in che módo sta che égli
sia vóstro fratélló?*

I am on the point of leaving.
This is the question.
Stay as long as you please.
Where do you live?
The point is, if it be good or not.
The thing is as I tell you.
To live upon bread and water.
How do you do?
He is well.
To be quiet.
Whilst I was at the window, I
saw him going by.
He stands like a marble statue,
without speaking.
Tell me, how comes it that he
is your brother?

READING LESSON.

Il fuoco, l'acqua e l'onore.

Il fuoco, l'acqua e l'onore, fecero un tempo comunella insieme. Il fuoco non può mai stare in un luogo, e l'acqua anche sempre si muove; onde tratti dalla loro inclinazione, indussero l'onore a far viaggio in compagnia. Prima dunque di partirsi, tutti e tre dissero che bisognava darsi fra loro un segno da potersi ritrovare, se mai si fossero scostati e smarriti l'uno dall'altro. Disse il fuoco: "E se mi avvenisse mai questo caso che io mi segregassi da voi, ponete ben mente colà dove voi vedete fumo; questo è il mio segnale e quivi mi troverete certamente." — "E me," disse l'acqua, "se voi non mi vedete, non mi cercate colà dove vedrete seccura o spaccature di terra, ma dove vedrete salci, ontani, cannucce o erba molto alta e verde; andate costà in traccia di me, e quivi sarò io." — "Quanto a me," disse l'onore, "spalancate ben gli occhi, e ficcatemegli bene addosso e tenetemi saldo, perchè se la mala ventura mi guida fuori di cammino, sicchè io mi perda una volta, non mi troverete più."

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. A drop of water complained of remaining unknown in the ocean. Moved to compassion, a genius caused an oyster to swallow it. It became the most beautiful pearl of the East, and was the most splendid ornament of the Great Mogul's throne.

2. Milton, after he became blind, married, for his third wife, a woman who was very beautiful, but of a furious temper. A friend once said to him, that his wife was like a rose. "I can judge of the color of it," he replied, "only by the thorns."

3. Who would believe that smoking tobacco was in fashion with the English ladies in the sixteenth century? Every day, when Queen Elizabeth rose, there were (one saw) thirty ladies seated in a circle around her, smoking pipes. The queen set (gave) them the example; but one day she broke the pipe, saying, "We will renounce a pleasure that evaporates in smoke."

4. A doctor was translating a work. They came to tell him that his wife was very sick, and desired to speak with him. "I have only one page to translate," said he; "when I will come immediately." A second messenger came, and informed him that she was dying. "Two words more, and I have done," said the translator. "Go, return to her." A moment after, they came to tell him that she was dead. "I am very sorry for it," said he; "she was a good woman:" and he continued his work.

VOCABULARY.

1. Complained, *si dólse* ; moved, *mósso* ; caused (made), *féce* ; became, *divénne*.

2. Become, *divenúto* ; furious, *furibóndo* ; can, *pósso* ; judge, *giudicáre*.

3. Would believe, *crederébbe* ; one saw, *si vedévano* ; seated, *sedúto* ; smoking pipes, *pipávano* ; gave, *dáva* ; broke, *spezzò* ; we will renounce, *rinunzierémo* ; evaporates, *svapóra*.

4. Was translating, *stáva traducéndo* ; they came, *vénnero* ; will come, *verrò* ; came, *vénne* ; she was dying, *éra ágli estrémi* ; go, *andáte* ; return, *tornáte* ; I am sorry, *me ne rincrésce* ; continued, *continud*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

*A chi sòno càri i nòmi del Sárpi, del Parúta e del' Algarótti?
Che bisógna fáre per l' infortúnio?*

Per réggere all' ingiustízia dégli uómini che è necessáριο?

Chi fu Áldo Maurizio?

E il Zéno ed il Goldóni?

Chi fu Bémbo?

Cóme si chiamáva anticamente Nápoli?

Che si dice délla poténza Veneziána?

Son tánto càri all' Európa quánto all' Itàlia.

*Bisógna compiángierlo e soccór-
rerlo se si può.*

Un gran corággio.

*Il primo célebre stampatóre che
sia státo in Európa.*

*Sóno i pádri del drámma e
délla commédia italiána.*

*Il primo legislatóre della lin-
gua italiána.*

*Parténope, nóme di una Siréna
che credési ábbia fondáta la
città.*

*Élla ha arricchíta l' Itàlia e l'
ha difésa gran témpo dáí
Bárbari.*

CHAPTER XXVII.

ADVERBS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

<i>Vi racconterò la cosa per minuto,</i>	I will relate the affair minutely.
<i>Osservate minutamente ogni cosa,</i>	Observe every thing minutely.
<i>Per ora non posso dirvi di più,</i>	I cannot tell you any more now.
<i>Dove andate così per tempo?</i>	Where do you go so early?
<i>Dite da véro, oppure burlate?</i>	Are you in earnest, or joking?
<i>Dove si va così in fretta?</i>	Where are you going so quickly?
<i>Cattiva erba nasce dappertutto,</i>	Weeds grow everywhere.
<i>Il tempo passa presto,</i>	Time passes quickly.
<i>Mi preme assai di parlarvi,</i>	I much need to speak to him.
<i>Venite quanto più presto potete,</i>	Come as soon as possible.
<i>V'ingannate di gran lunga,</i>	You are greatly mistaken.
<i>Questa non è già colpa vostra,</i>	This is not your fault.
<i>Gli uomini imitano molto, e riflettono poco,</i>	Men imitate much, and reflect little.
<i>Chi obbedisce alla cieca, spesso si pente,</i>	He who obeys blindly, often repents.
<i>Chi sempre ride, spesso inganna,</i>	He who always laughs, often deceives.
<i>Le sue cose vanno di bene in meglio,</i>	His affairs become better and better.
<i>Io non vi voglio neppur guardare!</i>	I do not wish even to look at you!
<i>Gli ho reso conto appunto di ogni cosa,</i>	I have rendered an exact account of every thing.
<i>Di raro il medico piglia medicina,</i>	The physician rarely takes medicine.
<i>Non bisogna mai parlare a caso,</i>	We should never speak at random.
<i>Me ne ricorderò per un pezzo,</i>	I shall remember it for a long time.
<i>Dónde venite? Dove andate?</i>	Whence do you come? Where are you going?

ADVERBS.

I. The greater portion of the Italian adverbs are formed of a feminine adjective and the noun *mén-te*, manner (from the Latin *mens*) ; as, *Dótta*, learned ; *dotta-mén-te*, learnedly ; *sávia*, wise ; *savia-mén-te*, wisely ; *dólce*, sweet ; *dolce-mén-te*, sweetly.

If the adjective ends in *le* or *re*, the final *e* is dropped, for the sake of euphony, in the formation of the adverb : as, *Fedéle*, faithful ; *fedel-mén-te*, faithfully ; *maggióre*, greater ; *maggior-mén-te*, greatly.

II. These adverbs have their comparatives and superlatives formed from the comparatives and superlatives of the adjectives ; as, *Più sincéra*, more sincere ; *più sinceramén-te*, more sincerely ; *méno felice*, less happy ; *méno felicemén-te*, less happily ; *prudéntissima*, very prudent ; *prudéntissimamén-te*, very prudently.

III. Some adverbs are mere adjectives, and are used also in their comparatives and superlatives ; as, *Chidro* (*chiaramén-te*), clearly ; *più chidro*, more clearly ; *schietta* (*schiettamén-te*), candidly ; *méno schietta*, less candidly ; *triste* (*tristamén-te*), sadly ; *tristissimo*, very sadly.

IV. The following are the other adverbs most in use in Italian : —

ADVERBS OF TIME.

<i>Adesso</i> ,	now.	<i>Avantiér</i> ,	the day before yester-
<i>Mò</i> ,	"	<i>Iér l' áltro</i> ,	the other day. [day.
<i>Óra</i> ,	"	<i>L' altriéri</i> ,	" " "
<i>Allóra</i> ,	then.	<i>Iermattína</i> ,	yesterday morning.
<i>Ancóra</i> ,	still.	<i>Ieraséra</i> ,	last evening.
<i>Tuttóra</i> ,	"	<i>Oggi</i> ,	to-day.
<i>Talóra</i> ,	sometimes.	<i>Oggidì</i> ,	in our days.
<i>Ognóra</i> ,	always.	<i>Stamáne</i> ,	this morning.
<i>Sémpre</i> ,	"	<i>Staséra</i> ,	this evening.
<i>Sovén-te</i> ,	often.	<i>Stanótte</i> ,	to-night.
<i>Testésó</i> ,	just now.	<i>Domattína</i> ,	to-morrow morning.
<i>Testè</i> ,	"	<i>Dimáni</i> ,	to-morrow.
<i>Iéri</i> ,	yesterday.	<i>Dománe</i> ,	"

<i>Posdimáni,</i>	the day after to-morrow.
<i>Posdománe,</i>	" " "
<i>Innánzi,</i>	before.
<i>Diánzi,</i>	"
<i>Prúna,</i>	"
<i>Diétro,</i>	afterward.
<i>Dópo,</i>	"
<i>Póí,</i>	then, since, afterward.
<i>Dipóí,</i>	" " "
<i>Dappóí,</i>	" " "
<i>Póscia,</i>	" " "
<i>Indi,</i>	then, afterward.
<i>Quíndi,</i>	" "
<i>Apprésso,</i>	" "
<i>Infine,</i>	in fine.
<i>Da cápo,</i>	once more.
<i>Già,</i>	already.
<i>Dì già,</i>	"
<i>Mái,</i>	never.
<i>Giammídi,</i>	"

<i>Guári,</i>	not long since.
<i>Omái,</i>	now.
<i>Oramái,</i>	"
<i>Oggimái,</i>	"
<i>Quási,</i>	almost.
<i>Círca,</i>	about.
<i>Incírca,</i>	"
<i>Intórno,</i>	"
<i>Tárdi,</i>	late.
<i>Pertémpo,</i>	soon.
<i>Préstó,</i>	quick.
<i>Adágio,</i>	slow.
<i>Méntre,</i>	whilst.
<i>Intánto,</i>	in the mean time.
<i>Frattánto,</i>	" " " "
<i>Trattánto,</i>	" " " "
<i>Dacchè,</i>	since.
<i>Finchè,</i>	until.
<i>Quándo,</i>	when.
<i>Tuttavía,</i>	still.

OF PLACE.

<i>Quì,</i>	here, hither.
<i>Quà,</i>	"
<i>Lì,</i>	there, thither.
<i>Là,</i>	"
<i>Costì,</i>	there near you.
<i>Costà,</i>	"
<i>Cotì,</i>	there, thither.
<i>Colà,</i>	"
<i>Sù,</i>	up.
<i>Giù,</i>	down.
<i>Quirì,</i>	there.
<i>Glì,</i>	"
<i>Ívì,</i>	"
<i>Indi,</i>	thence.
<i>Quínci,</i>	from hence.
<i>Quíndi,</i>	from thence.
<i>Quassù,</i>	here above.
<i>Quaggiù,</i>	here below.
<i>Insù,</i>	upward.
<i>Ingiù,</i>	downward.
<i>Lassù,</i>	there above.
<i>Laggiù,</i>	there below.
<i>Colassù,</i>	there above.
<i>Colaggiù,</i>	there below.
<i>Costaggiù,</i>	there below near you.
<i>Costínci,</i>	from thence.
<i>Óve,</i>	where.
<i>Dóve,</i>	"
<i>Dónde,</i>	whence.

<i>Ovunque,</i>	wherever.
<i>Dovunque,</i>	"
<i>Ógni dóve,</i>	everywhere.
<i>Altrove,</i>	elsewhere.
<i>Altronde,</i>	"
<i>Avánti,</i>	before.
<i>Davánti,</i>	"
<i>Diétro,</i>	behind.
<i>Didiétro,</i>	"
<i>Indiétro,</i>	back.
<i>Addiétro,</i>	"
<i>Sopra,</i>	upon, above.
<i>Sotto,</i>	under, below.
<i>Abbasso,</i>	below.
<i>Éntro,</i>	within.
<i>Déntro,</i>	"
<i>Fuóri,</i>	without.
<i>Fuóra,</i>	"
<i>Difuóri,</i>	from without.
<i>Difuóra,</i>	" "
<i>Alláto,</i>	aside.
<i>Accánto,</i>	"
<i>Attórno,</i>	around.
<i>Dattórno,</i>	"
<i>Rimpétto,</i>	opposite.
<i>Dirimpétto,</i>	"
<i>Lúngi,</i>	far.
<i>Óltre,</i>	beyond.

OF ORDER.

<i>Prima,</i>	first.	<i>Assieme,</i>	together.
<i>Dipoi,</i>	then.	<i>Insieme,</i>	"
<i>Quindi,</i>	afterward.	<i>A vicenda,</i>	by turns.
<i>Infine,</i>	finally.	<i>Al tutto,</i>	altogether.
<i>In giro,</i>	by turns.	<i>Al rovescio,</i>	the reverse.
<i>Alla fila,</i>	in a row.	<i>Sossopra,</i>	topsy-turvy.

OF QUANTITY.

<i>Più,</i>	more.	<i>Niente,</i>	nothing.
<i>Méno,</i>	less.	<i>Affatto,</i>	"
<i>Máncó,</i>	"	<i>Davantiággio,</i>	more.
<i>Assái,</i>	much.	<i>Alpiù,</i>	at the most.
<i>Abbastánza,</i>	enough.	<i>Alménó,</i>	at least.
<i>A sufficiénza,</i>	"	<i>Almánco,</i>	" "

OF QUALITY.

<i>Béne,</i>	well.	<i>Brancolóné,</i>	crawlingly.
<i>Mále,</i>	badly.	<i>Inginocchióne,</i>	on one's knees.
<i>Appéna,</i>	hardly.	<i>Carpóné,</i>	upon all fours.
<i>Appósta,</i>	purposely.	<i>A cavalcióne,</i>	astride over.
<i>A gára,</i>	emulously.	<i>Tentóné,</i>	gropingly.
<i>A cáso,</i>	by chance.	<i>Boccóné,</i>	with one's face downward.
<i>A tórtó,</i>	wrongly.		

OF AFFIRMATION.

<i>Sì,</i>	yes.	<i>Maist,</i>	yes, indeed.
<i>Già,</i>	yes, certainly.	<i>Sì, béne,</i>	yes, truly.
<i>Béne,</i>	well.	<i>Affè,</i>	in faith.
<i>Invéro,</i>	indeed, truly, in truth.	<i>Appúnto,</i>	just.
<i>Davvéro,</i>	" " "	<i>Volentiéri,</i>	willingly.
<i>Da dovéro,</i>	" " "	<i>Benvolentiéri,</i>	very willingly.
<i>In verità,</i>	" " "	<i>Malvolentiéri,</i>	unwillingly.

OF NEGATION.

<i>No,</i>	no, not.	<i>Nonmái,</i>	never.
<i>Mái,</i>	never.	<i>Mica,</i>	not.
<i>Mainò,</i>	no, indeed.	<i>Nonmica,</i>	not at all.
<i>Cérto no,</i>	certainly not.	<i>Per nulla,</i>	by no means.
<i>Nongià,</i>	not, not at all.	<i>Niente affatto,</i>	nothing at all.

OF DOUBT.

<i>Fórse,</i>	perhaps.	<i>Per accidente,</i>	perchance.
<i>Forsechè,</i>	"	<i>Per sòrte,</i>	"
<i>Può éssere,</i>	may be.	<i>Per avventúra,</i>	"
<i>Può dársi,</i>	"		

OF COMPARISON.

<i>Sì</i> ,	so, thus.	<i>Viappiù</i> ,	a great deal more.
<i>Così</i> ,	" "	<i>Vieppiù</i> ,	" " " "
<i>Come</i> ,	as.	<i>Vianménò</i> ,	a great deal less.
<i>Siccome</i> ,	so, as.	<i>Vienménò</i> ,	" " " "
<i>Più</i> ,	more.	<i>A guisa</i> ,	like.
<i>Méno</i> ,	less.	<i>A módo</i> ,	"
<i>Assai</i> ,	much.	<i>Al pari</i> ,	"

OF INTERROGATION.

<i>Ove?</i>	where?	<i>Chè?</i>	how?
<i>Dove?</i>	where? whither?	<i>Cóme?</i>	how?
<i>Dónde?</i>	whence?	<i>Perchè?</i>	why?
<i>Quando?</i>	when?	<i>Quánto?</i>	how much?

OF CHOICE.

<i>Anzi</i> ,	rather, sooner.	<i>Piuprésto</i> ,	rather, sooner.
<i>Prima</i> ,	" "	<i>Piuttosto</i> ,	" "

OF DEMONSTRATION.

<i>Ecco</i> ,	here or there is; lo! behold!	<i>Eccoà</i> ,	there is, there are.
<i>Eccoquí</i> ,	here is, here are.	<i>Eccoghì</i> ,	" " "
<i>Eccoquà</i> ,	" " " "	<i>Eccolà</i> ,	" " "

V. A list of the adjectives which are used in Italian as adverbs:—

<i>Forte</i> ,	very much.	<i>Ráto</i> ,	rarely.
<i>Spéssò</i> ,	often.	<i>Solo</i> ,	only.
<i>Sodo</i> ,	fast, hard.	<i>Tutto</i> ,	all.
<i>Alto</i> ,	softly.	<i>Poco</i> ,	little.
<i>Certo</i> ,	certainly.	<i>Molto</i> ,	much.
<i>Triste</i> ,	sadly.	<i>Troppo</i> ,	too much.
<i>Dolce</i> ,	sweetly.	<i>Bello</i> ,	handsomely.
<i>Chiáro</i> ,	clearly.	<i>Buóno</i> ,	very well.
<i>Schiétto</i> ,	candidly.	<i>Méglío</i> ,	better.
<i>Piáno</i> ,	low, softly.	<i>Péggio</i> ,	worse.
<i>Tárdò</i> ,	late.	<i>Apérto</i> ,	openly.
<i>Lénto</i> ,	slowly.	<i>Subito</i> ,	immediately.
<i>Présto</i> ,	soon.	<i>Sicúro</i> ,	surely.
<i>Prónto</i> ,	readily.	<i>Dinésso</i> ,	lowly.
<i>Tósto</i> ,	speedily.	<i>Somméssò</i> ,	humbly.
<i>Ráto</i> ,	"	<i>Vicíno</i> ,	near.
<i>Táto</i> ,	so much.	<i>Lontáno</i> ,	far.

In order to know when these words are adjectives, and when adverbs, it is sufficient to observe, whether they

stand by themselves, or are added to or used for a noun : for, in the former case, they are always adverbs ; and, in the latter, adjectives.

· VI. Besides the above adverbs, there are some expressions called *adverbial phrases*; chiefly the following :—

<i>Di subito,</i>	suddenly.	<i>Di rado,</i>	seldom, rarely.
<i>Di bôtto,</i>	presently.	<i>Di raro,</i>	" "
<i>In un baléno,</i>	in an instant.	<i>Infatti,</i>	in fact.
<i>In un batter d'occhio,</i>	in the twinkling of an eye.	<i>Difatti,</i>	" "
<i>Póco fa,</i>	a little while ago.	<i>Di gran lunga,</i>	by far.
<i>Fra póco,</i>	in a short time.	<i>A lúngo andare,</i>	in the long-run,
<i>Un pézzo fa,</i>	some time ago.		in time.
<i>Delle vólte,</i>	at times.	<i>A più potère,</i>	with all one's might.
<i>All' improvviso,</i>	unexpectedly.	<i>Di mala voglia,</i>	unwillingly.
<i>All' avventre,</i>	in future.	<i>A un di presso,</i>	almost.
<i>A minuto,</i>	in detail.	<i>D' allora in quà,</i>	since that time.
<i>Di fresco,</i>	newly.	<i>D' ora innanzi,</i>	henceforth.
<i>Di buon grádo,</i>	willingly.	<i>In quel mentre,</i>	in or at that time.
<i>Mô malgrádo,</i>	against my will.	<i>Di púnto in púnto,</i>	exactly.
<i>Sénza méno,</i>	positively.	<i>Di púnto in bidáco,</i>	point-blank.
<i>Quánto prima,</i>	very soon.	<i>Di quándo in quándo,</i>	now and then.
<i>A bello stúdio,</i>	designedly.	<i>Di trátto in trátto,</i>	" " "
<i>A bella pósta,</i>	"	<i>Di tánto in tánto,</i>	" " "
<i>A méno che,</i>	unless.	<i>Il più per lo più,</i>	on the whole,
<i>Da per tútto,</i>	everywhere.		at the utmost.
<i>Per ógni dóve,</i>	"		
<i>Ad un trátto,</i>	at once.		

READING LESSON.

La Póvera Cícca.

È brúna l' ária — per le contráde,
A fiócche a fiócche la néve cåde ;
E là in ginóccchio préssò la chiéssa,
Géme una vécchia dóнна prostéssa :
Órba dégli ócchi, la poverétta
Atténde il páne, che a léi si gétta . . .
Fáte limósina, pietósa génte,
Fáte limósina álla dolénte !

Vói non sapéte che quélla dóнна,
Mácero il víso, lórda la gónna,
De' suói concénti cóll' armonía
Di cénto pópoli l' álme rapía ;

Oh quánta invidia ai fortunáti
 Che d' un sorriso rendéa beáti !
 Fáte limósina, pietósa génte,
 Fate limósina álla dolénte !

Oh quánte vólte fuór de' teátri
 L' imménsa fólla dégl' idolátri
 Fra mille plaúsi le féa codázze
 Fíno álla pórtá del súdo palázze,
 E riverénte stendéa il ginóccchio
 Perchè scendésse dáll' auréo cóccchio !
 Fáte limósina, pietósa génte,
 Fáte limósina álla dolénte !

Quánte dovízie spandéva intórno
 Il súdo magnífico vásto soggiórno !
 Brónzi, colónne, vási, cristállí,
 Argénto ed óro, cócchi e cavállí . . .
 Dí fióri e gémme da tútte bándé,
 Sóvra i súoi pássi piovéan ghirlándé . . .
 Fáte limósina, pietósa génte,
 Fáte limósina álla dolénte !

Ma un dí fra l' ánsie d' un dúolo atróce
 Perdè la vísta, perdè la vóce —
 Ahi sventuráta ! or per le stráde
 Ya mendicándo l' altrúi pietáde,
 Ella che un giòrno per chi geméa
 De' suói tesóri l' árche schiudéa !
 Fáte limósina, pietósa génte,
 Fáte limósina álla dolénte !

Ma il fréddo addóppia — gelída e spéssa
 La néve cópre la genufléssa,
 Che, pur pregándo, intirizzíta
 -Stringe il Rosárió fra le súde díta —
 -Perchè la mísera confídi ancóra
 Nélla pietáde del ciel, che implóra,
 Fáte limósina, pietósa génte,
 Fáte limósina álla dolénte !

A. FUSINATO.

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. A truly courageous man is he who has a knowledge of danger. We often see men who neither fear nor are afraid of death: yet we cannot call them courageous; because (being), ignorant of danger, they rush forward foolishly.

2. Francis I., going out from the council which had determined upon war with Italy, met his buffoon, who said to him, "Sire, it seems to me that your councillors are fools."—"Why?" asked the king. "Because," he replied, "they have been so long discussing what part of Italy they intend to enter, and have never said a word about the part to go out. Therefore, O sire! take care not to go there at all." A month after this, Francis was a prisoner in Pavia.

3. There are many people who think that they can learn the Italian language in three months; and (these people), after six months' study, do not know how to say, "I have just written; the clock has just struck ten; I should like to know it for certain."

VOCABULARY.

1. We see, *si vedono*; they rush, *spingono*.

2. Going, *uscendo*; met, *incontro*; have (been discussing) discussed, *hanno discusso*; said, *détto*; take care, *avvertite*.

3. Think, *stímamo*; do know, *sánno*; I should like, *vorréi*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

Che cosa dimandò egli?

Il perchè.

Chè ora è?

Sóno appéna battúte le diéci.

Perchè non siéte venúto?

Perchè sóno státo alla villa.

È quèlla dúnque la vóstra amíca?

È ben léi.

Avéte vino, páne, formággio, quálche cosa?

Non ho próprio nùlla da dárvi?

Non avéte neppure úna scodélla di látte?

Non ho nùlla in verità.

È dúnque un ánno e mézzo ch'èlla è partíta?

No, non sóno ancóra quíndici mési?

Dóve dimóra il sùo Signór pádre?

Dimóra quì vicíno.

Che effétto fa la medicína?

Guarísce talvóltà e consóla spésso.

Quándo conósce úno il valóre dell' ácqua?

Quándo è asciútto (dry) il pòrzo.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS.

MNEMONIC EXERCISE.

Via, via ; méno ciárle !
Oimè ! che védò máí ?
Deh ! non lo fáte,
Oh bélla ! son venúto per quésto,
Quándo è cosí, vádo via,
Cosí díco ; ancór ío,
La cósa andò pur cosí,
Éhi, quél giòvine !
Ánimo, ánimo básta cosí !
Éhi, quélla giòvine,
Evvíva, il nóstro Semprónio !
Ío ve l' ho pur détto,
Non ha pure mostráto di conós-
cermi,
Oh ! se potéssi rídere, rideréi
pur di cuóre,
Al cán che fúgge, ognún grída,
dágli, dágli,
Per Bácco, più ci pénso, e
méno so comprendere il mo-
tívo,
Quésto partíto è il miglióre ;
ánzi, il sólo cúi débba appi-
gliármí,
E cosí, che cósa facciámo ?

Addío, cáro : dóve sí va ?

Vía, non lo sgridáte : poveríno !

Ío vi ámo, perchè lo meritáte,

Come, come ; less talk !
 Alas ! what do I see ?
 Do not do it, I beg of you.
 Indeed ! I came on purpose.
 Since it is so, I shall go.
 I say so ; even I.
 It went off well.
 Here, young man !
 Courage ! that will do.
 Well, miss.
 Bravo, our Sempronio !
 I have, however, told you.
 He did not even appear to know
 me.
 Oh ! if I could laugh, I would
 laugh willingly.
 When a dog runs, people cry
 after him, after him.
 Truly, the more I think of it,
 the less I understand the
 motive.
 This part is the best ; nay, the
 only one which I ought to
 take.
 Well, what are we going to
 do ?
 Adieu, my dear : where are
 you going ?
 There, don't scold him : poor
 boy !
 I love you, because you deserve
 it.

CONJUNCTIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>E,</i>	and.	<i>Nonostante,</i>	still, nevertheless, notwithstanding, for all that.
<i>O,</i>	or, either.	<i>Nondimeno,</i>	
<i>Nè,</i>	nor, neither.	<i>Nientediméno,</i>	
<i>Se,</i>	if, whether.	<i>Con tutto ciò,</i>	
<i>Ma,</i>	but.	<i>Non per tanto,</i>	
<i>Però,</i>	"	<i>Non per questo,</i>	
<i>Che,</i>	that.	<i>Ciò non ostante,</i>	
<i>Pure,</i>	yet, nevertheless.	<i>Ciò non di meno,</i>	not at all, not in- deed.
<i>Già,</i>	yet, already.	<i>Tuttavia,</i>	
<i>Anzi,</i>	nay, rather, on the contrary.	<i>Non già,</i>	
<i>Anche,</i>	also, even.	<i>Non solo, }</i>	not only, not mere- ly.
<i>Anco,</i>	" "	<i>Non che, }</i>	
<i>Eziandio,</i>	" "	<i>Purchè,</i>	provided.
<i>Altresì,</i>	" "	<i>A meno chè,</i>	unless.
<i>Ancóra,</i>	also, even, again.	<i>Anzi chè,</i>	rather, sooner.
<i>Eppùre,</i>	yet, nevertheless.	<i>Anzi che no,</i>	rather than not, rather so than otherwise.
<i>Ossia,</i>	or, either.		
<i>Ovvéro,</i>	" "	<i>Sì,</i>	so, thus.
<i>Oppùre,</i>	" "	<i>Così,</i>	" "
<i>Nemmeno,</i>	neither, not even.	<i>Cóme,</i>	as, like.
<i>Nemmeno,</i>	" " "	<i>Siccome,</i>	" "
<i>Neppure,</i>	" " "	<i>Sicché,</i>	so, thus, wherefore.
<i>Néanche,</i>	" " "	<i>Così che,</i>	" " "
<i>Tampoco,</i>	" " "	<i>Talchè,</i>	so, so that.
<i>Se mai,</i>	if ever, if indeed.	<i>Giacchè,</i>	since.
<i>Se pure,</i>	" "	<i>Cioè,</i>	that is.
<i>Se però,</i>	if however.	<i>Cioè a dire,</i>	that is to say. —
<i>Se non,</i>	unless, except, but.	<i>Vale a dire,</i>	" "
<i>Se non che,</i>	" " "	<i>Almeno,</i>	at least.
<i>Acciò,</i>	in order that, to the end that.	<i>Almeno,</i>	" "
<i>Acciocchè,</i>		<i>Di più,</i>	moreover.
<i>Affine,</i>		<i>Indire,</i>	besides, besides this.
<i>Affinchè,</i>		<i>Oltrecchè,</i>	" " "
<i>Ancorchè,</i>	even that.	<i>Oltracciò,</i>	" " "
<i>Contuttochè,</i>	" "	<i>D'altronde,</i>	" " "
<i>Chè,</i>	for, why, because.	<i>Dunque,</i>	then, therefore.
<i>Perchè,</i>	" " "	<i>Adunque,</i>	" "
<i>Poichè,</i>	because, since, as,	<i>Onde,</i>	wherefore, where- upon.
<i>Posciachè,</i>	after.	<i>Laonde,</i>	therefore, for which reason.
<i>Perocchè,</i>	because, whereas, as, since.	<i>Quindi,</i>	
<i>Imperocchè,</i>		<i>Perciò,</i>	in short, in conclu- sion.
<i>Perciocchè,</i>			
<i>Imperciocchè,</i>		<i>In somma,</i>	whether, or, either.
<i>Conciosiachè,</i>	although.	<i>In fine,</i>	
<i>Quantunque,</i>	"	<i>Sia che,</i>	otherwise, besides.
<i>Sebbene,</i>	"	<i>Vuoi,</i>	
<i>Benchè,</i>	"	<i>Del resto,</i>	"
<i>Comechè,</i>	"	<i>Per altro,</i>	
<i>Avvegnachè,</i>	"		

<i>Táto,</i>	as.	<i>Intáto,</i>	} in the mean time, mean-
<i>Quáto,</i>	„	<i>Fráttáto,</i>	
<i>Quádo,</i>	when.	<i>Méntre,</i>	whilst, whilst that.
<i>Quánd' ánche,</i>	even when.	<i>Méntrecchè,</i>	„ „ „
<i>In guisa che,</i>	} so that, in such a	<i>Salvo,</i>	save, saving, except.
<i>In módo che,</i>		<i>Eccétto,</i>	„ „ „
<i>In maniera che,</i>		<i>Tránne,</i>	„ „ „
<i>Di módo che,</i>		<i>Fuorchè,</i>	„ „ „
<i>Di maniera che,</i>		<i>Fórse,</i>	perhaps.
		<i>Óra,</i>	now.

I. *Púre* is often used in the sense of *ancóra* (even), and *sólo* (only).

II. *Perchè* has four significations: 1. In an interrogative phrase, it has the meaning of "why;" as, *Perchè andáte vià?* why do you go away? 2. Followed by a verb in the subjunctive, it signifies "in order that;" as, *Non vi ho dáto il denáro perchè lo spendíte súbito,* I did not give you the money that (in order that) you should immediately spend it. 3. It is used for "though;" as in the phrase of Dante, *Non lasciávam l'andár, perchè e' dicésse,* Let us not cease walking, although he speaks. 4. It also signifies "because;" as, *Perchè ridéte? Perchè ho vóglia di ridere,* Why do you laugh? Because I wish to laugh.

III. *Ánzi* is sometimes used for "before;" as, *Ánzi témpo, ánzi l'óra, ánzi la mía mórtè,* before the time, before the hour, before my death.

IV. *Méntre, nel méntre che* or *méntre che, in témpo che,* signifies "whilst" or "whilst that;" as, *Méntr' égli cantáva, io balláva,* whilst he sung, I danced.

V. Many conjunctions, as *nondiméno, ciò non os-tánte,* etc., contain in themselves a pronoun, a preposition, an adverb, etc.; but, from their office of joining sentences together, they are commonly reckoned amongst conjunctions, though in fact they are but *conjunctive phrases*.

INTERJECTIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>Ah!</i>	ah! ha! alas!	<i>Ahimè! aimè!</i>	alas (me)!
<i>Eh! e!</i>	eh!	<i>Ehimè! eimè!</i>	"
<i>Ih!</i>	ih!	<i>Ohimè! oimè!</i>	"
<i>Oh! o!</i>	oh! ho!	<i>Omè!</i>	"
<i>Uh!</i>	uh!	<i>Oùè!</i>	alas (thee)!
<i>Ahi!</i>	ah! alas! [there!	<i>Oisè!</i>	alas (him or her)!
<i>Èhi!</i>	here! ho hey! ho	<i>Guà!</i>	woe!
<i>Òhi! oi!</i>	ah! oh!	<i>Àiùto!</i>	help!
<i>Ùhi!</i>	ah! alas!	<i>O Dio!</i>	O Heavens!
<i>Deh!</i>	ah! alas! pray!	<i>Ldsso!</i>	alas!
	pritheè!	<i>Lásso me!</i>	"
<i>Doh!</i>	oh! pshaw!	<i>Ahi lásso!</i>	"
<i>Ah, ah!</i>	ah, ah!	<i>Póvero me!</i>	wretched that I
<i>Eh, eh!</i>	eh, eh!	<i>Mísero me!</i>	am! unfortu-
<i>Oh, oh!</i>	oh, oh!	<i>Meschíno me!</i>	nate that I am!
<i>Poh!</i>	poh!	<i>Dolénto me!</i>	wretched me!
<i>Puh! pu!</i>	pu! pooh!		poor me!
<i>Èia!</i>	halloo!	<i>O me bedto!</i>	
<i>Olà!</i>	holla! ho there!	<i>O me felice!</i>	happy that I am!
<i>Così!</i>	so! thus!	<i>Bedto me!</i>	happy me!
<i>Sì!</i>	yes, certainly!	<i>Felice me!</i>	
<i>Già!</i>	" "	<i>Álto!</i>	halt!
<i>Páre!</i>	yet!	<i>Stà!</i>	stop!
<i>Cóme!</i>	how! how then!	<i>Ohè!</i>	
	why! why so!	<i>Guárda!</i>	take care! have
<i>Su!</i>		<i>Lárgo!</i>	care! beware!
<i>Orsù!</i>	up, up! come!	<i>Piáno,</i>	softly! gently!
<i>Su, su!</i>	come then!	<i>Adágio,</i>	slowly!
<i>Via!</i>		<i>Zi! zùto!</i>	whist! hush!
<i>Via, via!</i>	away!	<i>Cheto!</i>	quiet! still!
<i>Eh via!</i>	fie! fie upon!	<i>Non più!</i>	enough!
<i>Verégna!</i>	for shame!	<i>Básta!</i>	"
<i>Oibò!</i>	oh, fie! oh, fough!	<i>Silénzio!</i>	silence!
<i>Animo!</i>	courage! cheer up!	<i>Tacéte!</i>	"
<i>Corággio!</i>	" "	<i>Andáte!</i>	away!
<i>Fáte cuóre!</i>	" "	<i>Badáte!</i>	
<i>Béne!</i>	well!	<i>All' értà!</i>	mind! have care!
<i>Brávo!</i>	bravo! very well!	<i>Státe all' értà!</i>	beware!
<i>Buóno!</i>	good!	<i>Di grázia!</i>	pray!
<i>Víca!</i>	long live!	<i>Per carità!</i>	for charity's sake!
<i>Eh víva! evviva!</i>	huzza!	<i>Per amor del ciéto!</i>	for heaven's sake!
<i>Cápperi!</i>		<i>Mercè,</i>	mercy! mercy
<i>Cáppita!</i>	ay! heyday! mar-	<i>Misericórdia,</i>	upon us!
<i>Poffáre!</i>	ry!	<i>Possibile!</i>	is it possible!
<i>Oh bella!</i>	fine!	<i>Appúnto!</i>	exactly! just!
<i>Ecco!</i>	lo! behold!	<i>Pensáte!</i>	just think!*

* It is important to observe, that, as some of these interjections are used to express different and even contrary emotions or affections of the mind, their exact signification can only be determined by the sense of the words which accompany them, or give rise to the exclamation.

The interjections *lásso*, *póvero*, *mísero*, *meschino*, *bedto* (*me!*), are mere adjectives; and, when used by a female, take the feminine termination, — *lássa*, *póvera*, *mísera* (*me!*), etc.; and in the plural make *lássì*, *póveri* (*nói!*), etc., for the masculine; and *lásse*, *póvere* (*nói!*), etc., for the feminine; as, —

<i>Lássa me! in che mal' óra nác- qui?</i>	Alas! in what evil hour was I born?
<i>Míseri nói! che siám, se Iddío cí láschia?</i>	Miserable that we are! what becomes of us, if God for- sakes us?

Brávo, *zitto*, *chéto*, are also adjectives; and when used in speaking to a female, or to more than one male or female, follow the same rule; as, —

<i>Bráva! cóme cuándo?</i>	Bravo! as when?
<i>Zitti, un pó'!</i>	Hush, a little!

Brávo is also used in its superlative, and makes *bravíssimo*, *bravíssima*, *bravíssimi*, *bravissime*, "bravissimo."

READING LESSON.

La Rondinella.

Rondinélla pellegrína
Che ti pòsi in sul veróne
Ricantándo ógni mattína
Quélla flébile canzóne,
Che vuóì dírimi in túa favélla
Pellegrína rondinélla?

Solitária nell' oblío,
Dal túo spóso abandonáta,
Piángi fórsa al piánto mío
Vedovélla sconsoláta?
Piángi, piángi in tua favélla,
Pellegrína rondinélla.

Pur di me máncó infelíce
Tu álle pénne alméa t' affídi,

Scórri il lágo e la pendíce,
 Èmpi l' ária de' tuói grídi,
 Tútto il giòrno in túa favélla,
 Súi chiamándo, o rondinélla !

Oh, se ánc'h'io ! Ma lo conténde
 Quésta bássa angústa vólta,
 Dóve sóle non risplénde,
 Dóve l' ária ancór m' è tólta,
 D' ónde a te la mía favélla
 Giúnge appéna, o rondinélla !

Il settémbré innánzi viéne,
 E a lasciármí ti prepári :
 Tu vedrái lontáne aréne,
 Nuóvi mónti, nuóvi mári,
 Salutándo in túa favélla,
 Pellegrína rondinélla.

Ed ío tútte le mattíne
 Riapréndo gli ócchi al piánto
 Fra le névi e fra le bríne
 Crederò d' údir quel cánto,
 Ónde par che in túa favélla
 Mî compíanga, o rondinélla.

Una cróce a primavéra
 Troverái su quésto suólo ;
 Rondinélla in su la séra
 Sóvra a léi raccógli il vólo :
 Dille páce in túa favélla,
 Pellegrína rondinélla !

EXERCISE FOR TRANSLATION.

1. Lycurgus prohibited those who returned from a feast taking a light, in order that the fear of not being able to find their homes might prevent their becoming intoxicated.

2. There is nothing meaner than to see hypocrites launching their thunders against the weaknesses of humanity, whilst their heart is the sink of every vice.

3. Vespasian incurred the danger of being condemned to death, because he gaped while the fool Nero was singing on the stage in Rome.

4. During summer evenings, Dante was accustomed to sit upon a stone, which is still religiously preserved in Florence. One evening, a man unknown to him passed before him, and said, "Sir, I have promised to give an answer, and know not how to get myself out of the difficulty: you, who are so learned, can suggest it to me. What is the best mouthful?" Dante immediately answered, "An egg." A year after, at the same hour, Dante being seated on the same stone, the same man, whom he had not since seen, returned, and asked, "With what?" Dante, without hesitation, answered, "With salt."

VOCABULARY.

1. Prohibited, *vietò*; returned, *tornávano*; might prevent, *impedisse*; intoxicated, *ubbriacáte*.
2. Launching thunders, *scagliáre i fulmini*; sink, *sentína*.
3. Incurred (ran), *córse*; gaped, *sbadigliáva*.
4. Was accustomed, *soléva*; unknown, *sconosciúto*; to get out, etc., *trármi d' affáre*; can suggest, *potréste suggeríre*; mouthful, *boccóne*; without hesitation, *senza méttet témpo in mézzo*.

CONVERSAZIONE.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <i>Quál fu il regálo che féce un colonéllo ad úno de súoi granatiéri che pugnádo valorosissimaménte avéva perdúte ámbé le bráccia?</i> | <i>Úno scúdo, credéndo fórsa con ciò di ricompensárlo di tánta pérdita.</i> |
| <i>Tále meschinità non eccitò éssa lo sdégno del brávo soldáto?</i> | <i>Certaménte, e con ragióne disse al súo Colonéllo — Credéte fórsa ch' ío non ábbia perdúto che un páio di guánti?</i> |
| <i>Quále fáma hánnó lasciáta Ludovico XI. e Ferdinándó d' Aragóna?</i> | <i>Úna tristíssima fáma, perchè fúrono entrámbi crudéli e pér-fidi.</i> |
| <i>Non si chiamárono, il prímo cristianíssimo e l' áltro cattólico?</i> | <i>Sì, e ciò próva che l' ómbra del tróno può coprire imménsi delútti.</i> |
| <i>Che rispóse Dánte a chi gli domandáva qual fósse il migliór boccóne?</i> | <i>Un uóvo con sále.</i> |

Auxiliary Verbs.

Avére, to have.

INFINITIVE MOOD. — *Avére, to have.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

<i>ho or d,</i> <i>hai or di,</i> <i>ha or d (due),</i>	I have. thou hast. he has.	<i>abbiamo (avemo),</i> <i>avete,</i> <i>hanno or dano,</i>	we have. you have. they have.
---	----------------------------------	---	-------------------------------------

IMPERFECT TENSE.

<i>io avéva or avéa,</i> <i>tu avévi,</i> <i>egli avéva or avéa,</i>	I had. thou hadst. he had.	<i>avévamo,</i> <i>avévate,</i> <i>avévano (avieno),</i>	we had. you had. they had.
--	----------------------------------	--	----------------------------------

PERFECT TENSE.

<i>ebbi,</i> <i>avésti,</i> <i>ebbe,</i>	I had. thou hadst. he had.	<i>avémmo,</i> <i>avéste,</i> <i>ebbero,</i>	we had. you had. they had.
--	----------------------------------	--	----------------------------------

FUTURE TENSE.

<i>avrò,</i> <i>avrà,</i> <i>avrà,</i>	I shall have. thou wilt have. he will have.	<i>avrèmo,</i> <i>avrète,</i> <i>avranno,</i>	we shall have. you will have. they will have.
--	---	---	---

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

<i>avréi (avria),</i> <i>avrésti,</i> <i>avrébbe (avria),</i>	I should have. thou wouldst have. he would have.	<i>avrémmo,</i> <i>avrèste,</i> <i>avrèbbero (avriano),</i>	we could have. you should have. they would have.
---	--	---	--

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

<i>che io abbia,</i> <i>che tu abbia or abbi,</i> <i>che egli abbia,</i>	if I may have. if thou mayst have. if he may have.	<i>che abbiamo,</i> <i>che abbiate,</i> <i>che abbiano,</i>	if we may have. if you may have. if they may have.
--	--	---	--

IMPERFECT TENSE.

<i>che io avéssi,</i> <i>che tu avéssi,</i> <i>che egli avésse,</i>	if I might have. if thou couldst have. if he would have.	<i>che avéssimo,</i> <i>che avéste,</i> <i>che avéssero (-iso),</i>	if we should have. if you might have. if they might have.
---	--	---	---

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>abbi tu,</i> <i>abbia egli,</i>	have thou. let him have.	<i>abbiamo noi,</i> <i>abbiate voi,</i> <i>abbiano egliino,</i>	let us have. have ye. let them have.
---------------------------------------	-----------------------------	---	--

GERUND.

<i>avéndo,</i>	having.
----------------	---------

PARTICIPLES.

<i>avénte,</i> <i>avúto, avúta (s.),</i> <i>avúti, avúte (p.),</i> <i>avéndo avúto,</i>	having. had. having had.
--	--------------------------------

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>to ho avúto,</i> <i>to avéva avúto,</i> <i>to ebbi avúto,</i> <i>to avró avúto,</i> <i>to avrév avúto,</i> <i>che to abbia avúto,</i> <i>che to avéssi avúto,</i>	I have had. I had had. I had had. I shall have had. I should have had. if I may have had. if I might have had.
--	--

Èssere, to be.INFINITIVE MOOD.—*Èssere*, to be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

io *sòno*,
oi *or se'*,
è,I am.
thou art.
he is.*siàmo* (*séno*),
siète (*séte*),
sòno,we are.
you are.
they are.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

io *era*,
eri,
era,I was.
thou wast.
he was.*eravamo* (*éramo*),
eravate,
erano,we were.
you were.
they were.

PERFECT TENSE.

fui,
fosti,
fu (*fue*),I was.
thou wast.
he was.*fuiamo*,
foste,
furono (*fúнно*),we were.
you were.
they were.

FUTURE TENSE.

sarò (*fià*),
sarai,
sarà (*fià, fié*),I shall be.
thou wilt be.
he will be.*sarémo*,
sarète,
saranno (*fianno*),we shall be.
you will be.
they will be.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

sarei (*saria, fòra*),
sarèsti,
sarebbe (*saria, fòra*),I should be.
thou wouldst be.
he would be.*sarémmo*,
sarèste,
sarebbero (*sartano*),we should be.
if you were.
they should be

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

che io sia,
che tu sia, or *sti*,
che egli sia,if I may be.
if thou mayst be.
if he may be.*che siàmo*,
che siàte,
che siano, or *sieno*,if we may be.
if you may be.
if they may be.

IMPERFECT TENSE.

che io fossi (*fússi*),
che tu fossi,
che egli fosse,if I were, or should be.
if thou wert.
if he were.*che fossimo*,
che foste,
che fossero (*fóssino*),if we were.
if you were.
if they were.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sia, or *sti tu*,
sia egli,be thou.
let him be.*siàmo noi*,
siàte voi,
siano, or *sieno* *egliano*,let us be.
be ye.
let them be.

GERUND.

essendo,

being.

COMPOUND TENSES.

io sòno stàto,
io era stàto,
io sarò stàto,
io sarei stàto,
che io sia stàto,
che io fossi stàto,I have been.
I had been.
I shall have been.
I should have been.
if I may have been.
if I might have been.

PARTICIPLES.

stàto, *stàta* (s.), }
stàti, *stàte* (p.), }
essendo stàto,been.
having been.

* The past participle of the verb *èssere* always agrees with the subject in gender and number: thus we say, *io sòno stàto*, if the subject is masculine singular; *io sòno stàta*, if feminine singular; *noi siàmo stàti*, if masculine plural; *noi siamo stàte*, if feminine plural; and so on.

Regular Verbs.

VARIATION OF ACTIVE VERBS.

Active verbs, in the compound tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *avére*, to have.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

Amáre, to love.

PARADIGM OF THE VERBS ENDING IN *áre*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>
<i>am-áre</i> ,	to love.	<i>avére amáto</i> , to have loved.

GERUND.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>
<i>am-ándo</i> ,	loving.	<i>avéndo amáto</i> , having loved.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>
<i>am-ánte</i> (s.), <i>am-ánti</i> (p.),* loving.	<i>am-áto</i> (m. s.), <i>am-áti</i> (p.), loved. <i>am-áta</i> (f. s.), <i>am-áte</i> (p.),* loved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

<i>ám-o</i> ,	I love, or do love.	<i>am-i-mo</i> ,	we love.
<i>ám-i</i> ,	thou lovest.	<i>am-áte</i> ,	you love.
<i>ám-a</i> ,	he loves.	<i>ám-ano</i> ,	they love.

Imperfect.

<i>io am-áta</i> ,	I loved, or did love.	<i>am-ávamo</i> ,	we loved.
<i>am-ávi</i> ,	thou lovedst.	<i>am-aváte</i> ,	you loved.
<i>egli am-áta</i> ,	he loved.	<i>am-ávano</i> ,	they loved.

Perfect.

<i>am-ái</i> ,	I loved, or did love.	<i>am-ám-mo</i> ,	we loved.
<i>am-ásti</i> ,	thou lovedst.	<i>am-ásté</i> ,	you loved.
<i>am-ó</i> ,	he loved.	<i>am-árono</i> (<i>am-áro</i>),	they loved.

Future.

<i>am-erò</i> ,†	I shall or will love.	<i>am-eré-mo</i> ,	we shall or will love.
<i>am-erai</i> ,	thou wilt love.	<i>am-eríte</i> ,	you will love.
<i>am-erá</i> ,	he will love.	<i>am-eránno</i> ,	they will love.

* The present participle of active verbs, like that of *avére*, agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

† The verbs of this conjugation in the future and the conditional change the *a* of their terminations for *e*, and make *am-erò*, instead of *am-arò*, etc.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Second Perfect.

<i>ho amato,</i>	I have loved.	<i>abbiamo amato,</i>	we have loved.
<i>hai amato,</i>	thou hast loved.	<i>avete amato,</i>	you have loved.
<i>ha amato,</i>	he, she, or it has loved.	<i>hanno amato,</i>	they have loved.

Pluperfect.

<i>io aveva amato,</i>	I had loved.	<i>avevamo amato,</i>	we had loved.
------------------------	--------------	-----------------------	---------------

Second Pluperfect.

<i>ebbi amato,</i>	I had loved.
--------------------	--------------

Future Anterior.

<i>avrò amato,</i>	I shall have loved
--------------------	--------------------

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

<i>che io am-i (am-e),</i>	that I love, or may love.	<i>che am-iamo,</i>	that we love.
<i>che tu am-i,</i>	that thou lovest.	<i>che am-i-ate,</i>	that you love.
<i>che egli am-i (am-e),</i>	that he loves.	<i>che am-ino,</i>	that they love.

Imperfect.

<i>che io am-assi,</i>	If I loved, or should love.	<i>che am-assimo,</i>	if we loved.
<i>che tu am-assi,</i>	if thou lovedst.	<i>che am-aste,</i>	if you loved.
<i>che egli am-asse,</i>	if he loved.	<i>che am-assero (-ino),</i>	if they loved.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.

<i>che io abbia amato,</i>	that I have loved, or may have loved.
----------------------------	--

Pluperfect.

<i>che io avessi amato,</i>	if I had loved.
-----------------------------	-----------------

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

<i>am-erei (am-eria),</i>	I should love.	<i>am-eremmo,</i>	we should love.
<i>am-eresti,</i>	thou wouldst love.	<i>am-ereste,</i>	you would love.
<i>am-erebbe (am-erta),</i>	he would love.	<i>am-erebbero (ameriano),</i>	they would love.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

avrei amato, I should, would, or could have loved, or might have loved.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>am-a tu,</i>	love thou.	<i>am-iamo noi,</i>	let us love.
<i>am-i egli,</i>	let him love.	<i>am-ate voi,</i>	love ye.
		<i>am-ino egli,</i>	let them love.

Besides the foregoing changes of termination, there are some verbs of the first conjugation which undergo in some persons and tenses a change of orthography.

Verbs ending in *ciare*, *giare*, drop the *i*, which follows *c*, *g*, whenever *ci*, *gi*, precede *e*, *i*; as, *Baciare*, to kiss; *fregiare*, to adorn.

Verbs ending in *iare*, in which *ia* form one syllable, drop the *i* whenever it is followed by another *i*; as, *Noiare*, to annoy.

Verbs ending in *iare*, in which *ia* form two syllables, drop the *i* only when it would be followed by the vowels *ia*; as, *Inviare*, to send.

Variation of the Verb Cercare.

PARADIGM. OF THE VERBS ENDING IN *cäre*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

cerc-o,
cercH-i,
cerc-a,

I search, or do search.
thou searchest.
he searches.

cercH-idmo,
cerc-äte,
cerc-ano,

we search.
you search.
they search.

Future.

cercH-erö,
cercH-erai,
cercH-erd,

I shall or will search.
thou wilt search.
he will search.

cercH-erämo,
cercH-eräte,
cercH-eränno,

we shall search.
you will search.
they will search.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

che io cercH-i (-e),
che tu cercH-i,
che egli cercH-i (-e),

that I search.
that thou search.
that he search.

che cercH-idmo,
che cercH-idte,
che cercH-ino,

that we search.
that you search.
that they search.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

cercH-eräi (-eria),
cercH-erästi,
cercH-erébbe,

I should search.
thou wouldst search.
he would search.

cercH-erämno,
cercH-eräste,
cercH-erébbero,

we should search.
you would search.
they would search.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

cerc-a tu,
cercH-i egli,

search thou.
let him search.

cercH-idmo noi,
cerc-äte voi,
cercH-ino egliino,

let us search.
search ye.
let them search.

Tenses conjugated like those of the regular verb are omitted.

Variation of the Verb *Pregare*.PARADIGM OF THE VERBS ENDING IN *gäre*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

preg-o,
pregu-i,
preg-a,

I entreat, or do entreat.
thou entreatest.
he entreats.

pregu-iämo,
preg-äte,
preg-ano,

we entreat.
you entreat.
they entreat.

Future.

pregu-erä,
pregu-eräi,
pregu-erä,

I shall or will entreat.
thou wilt entreat.
he will entreat.

pregu-erämo,
pregu-eräte,
pregu-eränno,

we shall entreat:
you will entreat
they will entreat.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

che io pregu-i (-e),
che tu pregu-i,
che egli pregu-i (-e),

that I entreat.
that thou entreat.
that he entreat.

che pregu-iämo,
che pregu-iäte,
che pregu-ino,

that we entreat.
that you entreat.
that they entreat.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

pregu-eräi,
pregu-eräsi,
pregu-eräbbe,

I should entreat.
thou wouldst entreat.
he would entreat.

pregu-erämmo,
pregu-eräste,
pregu-eräbbero,

we should entreat.
you would entreat.
they would entreat

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

preg-a tu,
pregu-i egli,

entreat thou.
let him entreat.

pregu-iämo noi,
preg-äte voi,
pregu-ino egliäno,

let us entreat.
entreat ye.
let them entreat.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are commonly divided into two classes, — those ending in *ēre* (long), accented, and those ending in *ere* (short), unaccented: both of these in the perfect have two terminations, *ēi* and *ētti*, except a few which have the termination *ēi* only.

Variation of the Verb Temere.

PARADIGM OF THE VERBS ENDING IN *ēre* (LONG), ACCENTED, AND OF THOSE WHICH, IN THE PERFECT, END IN *ēi* AND *ētti*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>tem-ēre,</i>	to fear	<i>avere temuto,</i>	to have feared.

GERUND.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>tem-endo,</i>	fearing.	<i>avendo temuto,</i>	having feared.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>tem-ēnte</i> (s.), <i>tem-ēnti</i> (p.),	fearing.	<i>tem-uto</i> (m. s.), <i>tem-uti</i> (p.),	feared.
		<i>tem-uta</i> (f. s.), <i>tem-ute</i> (p.),	feared.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<i>Present.</i>			
<i>tem-o,</i>	I fear, or do fear.	<i>tem-iamo,</i>	we fear.
<i>tem-i,</i>	thou fearest.	<i>tem-ete,</i>	you fear.
<i>tem-e,</i>	he fears.	<i>tem-ono,</i>	they fear.
<i>Imperfect.</i>			
<i>to tem-eva</i> or <i>tem-ēa,</i>	I feared, or did fear.	<i>tem-evamo,</i>	we feared.
<i>tem-evi,</i>	thou fearedst.*	<i>tem-evate,</i>	you feared.
<i>egli tem-eva,</i>	he feared.	<i>tem-evano,</i>	they feared.
<i>Perfect.</i>			
<i>tem-ēi</i> or <i>tem-ētti,</i>	I feared, or did fear.	<i>tem-ēmmo,</i>	we feared.
<i>tem-ēsti,</i>	thou fearedst.	<i>tem-ēste,</i>	you feared.
<i>tem-ē</i> or <i>tem-ētte,</i>	he feared.	<i>tem-ēcno,</i>	they feared.

Future.

tem-erò,
tem-erai,
tem-erà,

I shall or will fear.
thou wilt fear.
he will fear.

tem-eremo,
tem-erete,
tem-eranno,

we shall or will fear.
you will fear.
they will fear.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Second Perfect.

ho temúto,

I have feared.

abbiamo temúto,

we have feared.

Pluperfect

io aveva temúto, I had feared, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

che io tem-a,
che tu tem-a or -i,
che egli tem-a,

that I fear.
that thou fear
that he fear.

che tem-iamo,
che tem-iate,
che tem-ano,

that we fear.
that you fear.
that they fear.

Imperfect.

che io tem-essi,
che tu tem-essi,
che egli tem-esse,

if I feared.
if thou fearedst.
if he feared.

che tem-essimo,
che tem-este,
che tem-essero,

if we feared.
if you feared.
if they feared.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.

che io abbia temúto, that I have feared.

Pluperfect.

che io avessi temúto, if I had feared.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

tem-erei (-eria),
tem-eresti,
tem-erebbe (-eria),

I should fear.
thou wouldst fear.
he would fear.

tem-eremmo,
tem-ereste,
tem-erebbero,

we should fear.
you would fear.
they would fear.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

avrei temúto, I should, would, or could have feared, or might have feared.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

tem-i tu,
tem-a egli,

fear thou.
let him fear.

tem-iamo noi,
tem-ete voi,
tem-ano essi,

let us fear.
fear ye
let them fear.

Variation of the Verb *Tessere*.

PARADIGM OF THE VERBS ENDING IN *ère* (SHORT), UNACCENTED;
AND OF THOSE WHICH, IN THE PERFECT, END IN *éi* ONLY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>téss-ere,</i>	to weave.	<i>avére tessúto,</i>	to have woven.

GERUND.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>tess-éndo.</i>	weaving.	<i>avéndo tessúto,</i>	having woven.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>
<i>tess-énte</i> (s.), <i>tess-énte</i> (p.), weaving.	<i>tess-úto</i> (m. s.), <i>tess-úti</i> (p.), woven.
	<i>tess-úta</i> (f. s.), <i>tess-úte</i> (p.), woven.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

téss-o, I weave, or do weave, or am weaving. | *tess-iámo* (*tess-émo*), we weave.

Imperfect.

to *tess-éva* or *tess-éa*, I wove, or did weave, or was weaving.

Perfect.

<i>tess-éi</i> ,	I wove, or did weave.	<i>tess-émmo</i> ,	we wove.
<i>tess-ésti</i> ,	thou wovest.	<i>tess-éste</i> ,	you wove.
<i>tess-é</i> (<i>tess-éu</i>),	he wove.	<i>tess-érono</i> ,	they wove.

Future.

tess-erò, I shall or will weave.

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>Second Perfect.</i>		<i>Pluperfect.</i>	
<i>he tessuto,</i>	I have woven	<i>he aveva tessuto,</i>	I had woven, etc

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Imperfect.</i>	
<i>che io tess-a,</i>	that I weave.	<i>che io tess-essi,</i>	that I wove.

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>Perfect.</i>		<i>Pluperfect.</i>	
<i>che io abbia tessuto,</i>	that I may have woven.	<i>che io avessi tessuto,</i>	if I might have woven.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

<i>Present.</i>	
<i>tess-erei (tess-eria),</i>	I should, would, or could weave, or might weave.

COMPOUND TENSE.

<i>Past.</i>	
<i>avrei tessuto,</i>	I should, would, or could have woven, or might have woven.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

tess-i tu, weave thou.

Verbs ending in *cère* (long), accented, in order to preserve the soft sound of *e* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a, o, u*; as, *Tacere*, to be silent.

Verbs ending in *iere* drop the *i* whenever it is followed by another *i*; as, *Empiere*, to fill.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are divided into three classes, — those which, in the present of the indicative, end in *o*; those which end in *isco*; and those which have both of these terminations.

Variation of the Verb Sentire.

PARADIGM OF THE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION, WHICH, IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE, END IN *o* ONLY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>sent-ire,</i>	to hear.	<i>avere sentito,</i>	to have heard.

GERUND.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>sent-endo,</i>	hearing.	<i>avendo sentito,</i>	having heard.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Past.</i>	
<i>sent-ente</i> (s.), <i>sent-enti</i> (p.),	hearing.	<i>sent-ito</i> (m. s.), <i>sent-iti</i> (p.),	heard.
		<i>sent-ita</i> (f. s.), <i>sent-ite</i> (p.),	heard.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<i>Present.</i>			
<i>sent-o,</i>	I hear, or do hear.	<i>sent-iamo,</i>	we hear.
<i>sent-i,</i>	thou hearest.	<i>sent-ite,</i>	you hear.
<i>sent-e,</i>	he hears.	<i>sent-ono,</i>	they hear.

Imperfect.

<i>to sent-iva</i> or <i>sent-ia,</i>	I heard, or did hear.	<i>sent-ivamo,</i>	we heard.
<i>sent-ivi,</i>	thou heardest.	<i>sent-ivate,</i>	you heard.
<i>egli sent-iva</i> or <i>sent-ia,</i>	he heard.	<i>sent-ivano,</i>	they heard.

Perfect.

<i>sent-ii,</i>	I heard, or did hear.	<i>sent-immo,</i>	we heard.
<i>sent-isti,</i>	thou heardest.	<i>sent-iste,</i>	you heard.
<i>sent-i</i> (<i>sent-io</i>),	he heard.	<i>sent-irono,</i>	they heard.

Future.

sent-irò,
sent-irai,
sent-irà,

I shall or will hear.
thou wilt hear.
he will hear.

sent-irémo,
sent-iréte,
sent-iranno,

we will hear.
you will hear.
they will hear.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Second Perfect.

ho sentito,

I have heard.

Pluperfect.

io aveva sentito,

I had heard, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

che io sent-A,
che tu sent-A or -I,
che egli sent-A,

that I hear.
that thou hear.
that he hear.

che sent-idmo,
che sent-iate,
che sent-ano,

that we hear.
that you hear.
that they hear.

Imperfect.

che io sent-issi,
che tu sent-issi,
che sent-isse,

that I heard.
that thou heardst.
that he heard.

che sent-issimo,
che sent-iste,
che sent-issero,

if we heard.
if you heard.
if they heard.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.

io abbia sentito,

that I may have heard.

Pluperfect.

io avessi sentito,

if I had heard.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

sent-iréi (-iria),
sent-irésti,
sent-irebbe (-iria),

I should hear.
thou wouldst hear.
he would hear.

sent-irémmo,
sent-iréste,
sent-irebbero,

we should hear.
you would hear.
they would hear.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

avrei sentito, I should, would, or could have heard, or might have heard.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sent-I tu,
sent-A egli,

hear thou.
let him hear.

sent-idmo noi,
sent-ite voi,
sent-ANO egliuo,

let us hear.
hear ye.
let them hear.

Variation of the Verb *Esibire*.

PARADIGM OF THOSE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION, WHICH,
IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE, HAVE THE
TERMINATION *isco* ONLY.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>
<i>Esib-ire</i> , to offer.	<i>avere esibito</i> , to have offered.

GERUND.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>
<i>esib-endo</i> , offering.	<i>avendo esibito</i> , having offered.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past.</i>
<i>esib-ente</i> (s.), <i>esib-enti</i> (p.), offering.	<i>esib-ito</i> (m. s.), <i>esib-iti</i> (p.), <i>esib-ita</i> (f. s.), <i>esib-ite</i> (p.), offered.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<i>Present.</i>	
<i>esib-isco</i> , <i>esib-isci</i> , <i>esib-isce</i> ,	I offer, or do offer. thou offerest. he offers.
<i>esib-iamo</i> , <i>esib-ite</i> , <i>esib-iscono</i> ,	we offer. you offer. they offer.

Imperfect.

<i>to esib-iva</i> or <i>-ia</i> , <i>esib-ivi</i> , <i>esib-iva</i> or <i>-ia</i> ,	I offered, or did offer. thou offeredst. he offered.
<i>esib-ivamo</i> , <i>esib-ivate</i> , <i>esib-ivano</i> ,	we offered. you offered. they offered.

Perfect.

<i>esib-ii</i> , <i>esib-isti</i> , <i>esib-i</i> (<i>esib-to</i>),	I offered, or did offer. thou offeredst. he offered.
<i>esib-immo</i> , <i>esib-iste</i> , <i>esib-irano</i> (<i>esib-iro</i>),	we offered. you offered. they offered.

Future.

<i>esib-irò</i> , <i>esib-irai</i> , <i>esib-irà</i> ,	I shall or will offer. thou wilt offer. he will offer.
<i>esib-irèmo</i> , <i>esib-irète</i> , <i>esib-iranno</i> ,	we will offer. you will offer. they will offer.

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>Second Perfect.</i>		<i>Pluperfect.</i>	
<i>he esibito,</i>	I have offered, etc.	<i>to avéva esibito,</i>	I had offered, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

<i>che io esib-isca,</i>	that I offer.	<i>che esib-iamo,</i>	that we offer.
<i>che tu esib-isca,</i>	that thou offer.	<i>che esib-iate,</i>	that you offer.
<i>che egli esib-isca,</i>	that he offer.	<i>che esib-iscano,</i>	that they offer.

Imperfect.

<i>che io esib-issi,</i>	if I offered.	<i>che esib-issimo,</i>	if we offered.
<i>che tu esib-issi,</i>	if thou offeredst.	<i>che esib-iste,</i>	if you offered.
<i>che egli esib-isse,</i>	if he offered.	<i>che esib-issero,</i>	if they offered.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.

Pluperfect.

<i>che io abbia esibito,</i>	that I have offered.	<i>che io avessi esibito,</i>	if I had offered.
------------------------------	----------------------	-------------------------------	-------------------

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

<i>esib-iréi (esib-iria),</i>	I should offer.	<i>esib-irémmo,</i>	we should offer.
<i>esib-iréssi,</i>	thou wouldst offer.	<i>esib-iréste,</i>	you would offer.
<i>esib-irébbe (esib-iria),</i>	he would offer.	<i>esib-irébbero,</i>	they would offer.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

avréi esibito, I should, would, or could have offered, or might have offered.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>esib-isci,</i>	offer thou.	<i>esib-iamo,</i>	let us offer.
<i>esib-isca,</i>	let him offer.	<i>esib-ite,</i>	offer ye.
		<i>esib-iscano,</i>	let them offer.

Cucire, to sew.

Verbs ending in *cire*, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o* ; as, *Cucire*, to sew.

PARADIGM OF THE VERBS ENDING IN *cire*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

cúci-o,
cúc-i,
cúc-e,

I sew, or do sew.
thou sewest.
he sews.

cuc-lámo (-lmo),
cuc-ite,
cúci-amo,

we sew.
you sew.
they sew.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

che io cúci-a,
che tu cúci-a or cúci-i,
che egli cúci-a,

that I sew or may sew.
that thou sew.
that he sew.

che cuc-lámo,
che cuc-láte,
che cúci-ano,

that we sew.
that you sew.
that they sew.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

cúci tu,
cúcia egli,

sew thou.
let him sew

cuc-lámo-noi,
cuc-ite voi,
cúciano eglino,

let us sew.
sew ye.
let them sew.

Abborrire, to abhor.

PARADIGM OF THOSE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION, WHICH,
IN THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE, END BOTH
IN *o* AND *isco*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>abbórr-o</i> or <i>abbórr-isco</i> , I abhor, or do abhor.	<i>abbórr-íamo</i> ,	we abhor.
<i>abbórr-i</i> or <i>abbórr-isci</i> , thou abhorrest:	<i>abbórr-ite</i> ,	you abhor.
<i>abbórr-e</i> or <i>abbórr-isce</i> , he or she abhors.	<i>abbórr-ono</i> or <i>-isco</i> ,	they abhor.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>che abbórr-a</i> or <i>-isca</i> , that I abhor.	<i>che abbórr-íamo</i> ,	that we abhor.
<i>che abbórr-a, -i,</i> or <i>-isca</i> , that thou abhor.	<i>che abbórr-iate</i> ,	that you abhor.
<i>che abbórr-a</i> or <i>isca</i> , that he abhor.	<i>che abbórr-ano</i> or <i>-is-</i> <i>cano</i> ,	that they abhor.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>abbórr-i</i> or <i>abbórr-isci</i> , abhor thou.	<i>abbórr-íamo</i> ,	let us abhor.
<i>abbórr-a</i> or <i>-isca</i> , let him abhor.	<i>abbórr-ite</i> ,	abhor ye.
	<i>abbórr-ano</i> or <i>-iscano</i> ,	let them abhor.

I Synoptical Table

OF THE

VARIATIONS OF THE REGULAR VERBS,

Showing their different Terminations in their Simple Tenses.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

[Am-] *äre.*[Tem-] *äre.* [Cred-] *ere.*[Abborr-] *ire.*

GERUND.

PRESENT.

[Am-] *ändö.*[Tem-] *ändö.*[Abborr-] *ändö.*

PARTICIPLES.

PRESENT.

[Am-] *änte.*[Tem-] *änte.*[Abborr-] *änte.*

PAST.

[Am-] *äto, -a,
äti, -e.*[Tem-] *äto, -a,
üti, -e.*[Abborr-] *ito, -a,
iti, -e.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

-PRESENT.

[Am-] *o,
i,
a;
iämo,
äte,
äno.*[Tem-] *o,
i,
e;
iämo,
äte,
ono.*[Abborr-] *o, isco,
i, isci,
e, isce;
iämo,
ite,
ono, iscono.*

IMPERFECT.

[Am-] *äva,
ävi,
äva;
avämo,
aväte,
ävano.*[Tem-] *äva, äa (ia),
ävi,
äva, äa;
evämo,
eväte,
ävano, étano.*[Abborr-] *iva, ia,
ivi,
iva, ia;
ivämo,
iväte,
ivano, iana.*

PERFECT DEFINITE.

[Am-] *äi,
ästi,
ö;
ämmo,
äste,
ärono (äro, är).*[Tem-] *äi, ätti,
ästi,
è, ètte (eo);
ämmo,
äste,
• ärono, èttaro (äro).*[Abborr-] *ii,
isti,
i (io);
immo,
iste,
irono.*

FIRST CONJUGATION.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

FUTURE INDEFINITE.

[Am-] erò,
erai,
erà ;
eremo,
erete,
eranno.

[Tem-] erò,
erai,
erà ;
eremo,
erete,
eranno.

[Abborr-] irò,
irai,
irà ;
iremo,
irete,
iranno.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

PRESENT.

[Am-] eréi (eria),
eresti,
erebbe (eria);
eremmo,
ereste,
erebbero (eriano)

[Tem-] eréi (eria),
eresti,
erebbe (eria);
eremmo,
ereste,
erebbero (eriano).

[Abborr-] iréi (iria),
iresti,
irebbe (iria);
irammo,
iriste,
irebbero (iriano)

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

[Am-] a,
i;
lamo,
áte,
ino.

[Tem-] i,
a;
lamo,
áte,
ano.

[Abborr-] i,
a, isci,
a, isca;
lamo,
íte,
ano, iscano.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT.

[Am-] i (e),
i,
i (e);
lamo,
áte,
ino.

[Tem-] a,
a, i,
a;
lamo,
áte,
ano.

[Abborr-] a, isca,
a, i, isca, ischi,
a, isca;
lamo,
áte,
ano, iscano.

IMPERFECT.

[Am-] éssi,
éssi,
éssi;
éssimo,
éste,
éssero.

[Tem-] éssi,
éssi,
éssi;
éssimo,
éste,
éssero.

[Abborr-] issi,
issi,
issi;
issimo,
iste,
issero.

VARIATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs are formed by joining the verb *essere*, to be, to the past participle of active verbs. They are, therefore, through all their tenses, varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*.

Variation of the Verb *Essere* amato.

PARADIGM OF THE PASSIVE VERBS.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

essere amato (m. s.), *amati* (p.), to be loved.
essere amata (f. s.), *amate* (p.), to be loved.

Past.

essere stato amato (m. s.), *stati amati* * (p.), to have been loved.
essere stata amata (f. s.), *stata amata* (p.), to have been loved.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

essendo amato (m. s.), *amati* (p.), being loved.
essendo amata (f. s.), *amate* (p.), being loved.

Past.

essendo stato amato (m. s.), *stati amati* (p.), having been loved.
essendo stata amata (f. s.), *stata amata* (p.), having been loved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

<i>io sono amato</i> (m.), -a (f.), I am loved. <i>sei amato</i> , -a, thou art loved. <i>è amato</i> , -a, he is loved.	<i>siamo amati</i> (m.), -e (f.), we are loved. <i>siete amati</i> , -e, you are loved. <i>ègino sono amati</i> , they are loved.
--	---

Imperfect.

<i>io era amato</i> , -a, I was loved. <i>eri amato</i> , -a, thou wast loved. <i>era amato</i> , -a, he was loved.	<i>eravamo amati</i> , -e, we were loved. <i>eravate amati</i> , -e, you were loved. <i>erano amati</i> , -e, they were loved.
---	--

Perfect.

<i>fui amato</i> , -a, I was loved. <i>fosti amato</i> , -a, thou wast loved. <i>fu amato</i> , -a, he was loved.	<i>fummo amati</i> , -e, we were loved. <i>foste amati</i> , -e, you were loved. <i>furono amati</i> , -e, they were loved.
---	---

Future.

<i>sarò amato</i> , -a, I shall be loved. <i>sarai amato</i> , -a, thou wilt be loved. <i>sarà amato</i> , -a, he will be loved.	<i>saremo amati</i> , -e, we shall be loved. <i>sarete amati</i> , -e, you will be loved. <i>saranno amati</i> , -e, they will be loved.
--	--

* The past participle of passive verbs, like that of *essere*, agrees with the subject of the verb in gender and number.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Second Perfect.

to sòno stàto amato, stàta amàta, I have been loved.
siàmo stàti amàti, stàte amàte, we have been loved.

Pluperfect.

to era stàto amato, stàta amàta, I had been loved.

Future Anterior.

sarò stàto amàto, stàta amàta, I shall or will have been loved.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

<i>to sia amàto, -a,</i>	that I be loved.	<i>siàmo amàti, -e,</i>	that we be loved.
<i>tu sia amàto, -a,</i>	that thou be loved.	<i>siàte amàti, -e,</i>	that you be loved.
<i>egli sia amàto, -a,</i>	that he be loved.	<i>stiano amàti, -e,</i>	that they be loved.

Imperfect.

<i>to fossi amàto, -a,</i>	if I were loved.	<i>fòssimo amàti, -e,</i>	if we were loved.
<i>tu fossi amàto, -a,</i>	if thou wert loved.	<i>fòste amàti, -e,</i>	if you were loved.
<i>fosse amàto, -a,</i>	if he were loved.	<i>fòssero amàti, -e,</i>	if they were loved.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.

to sia stàto amàto, stàta amàta, that I have been loved.

Pluperfect.

to fossi stàto amàto, stàta amàta, if I had been loved.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

<i>saréi amàto, -a,</i>	I should be loved.	<i>saremmo amàti, -e,</i>	we should be loved.
<i>saresti amàto, -a,</i>	thou wouldst be loved.	<i>sarèste amàti, -e,</i>	you would be loved.
<i>sarebbe amàto, -a,</i>	he would be loved.	<i>sarebbero amàti, -e,</i>	they would be loved.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

saréi stàto amàto, stàta amàta, I should, would, or could have been loved.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>sii amàto, amàta,</i>	be thou loved.	<i>siàmo amàti, amàte,</i>	let us be loved.
<i>sia amàto, egli,</i>	let him be loved.	<i>siàte amàti, amàte,</i>	be ye loved.
		<i>siano amàti egli, -o,</i>	let them be loved.

Many active verbs become passive by taking the particle *si*, as, *Domandàrsi*, to be asked: but then they are used in the third person only; as, *Si domànda*, it is asked; *si è domandàto*, it has been asked; etc.

VARIATION OF NEUTER VERBS.

Neuter verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*, to be, according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the Verb Partire.

PARADIGM OF THE NEUTER VERBS.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

partire, to depart.

Past.

essere partito (m. s.), *partiti* (p.), *partita* (f. s.), *partite* (p.),* to have departed

GERUND.

Present.

partendo, departing.

Past.

essendo partito, having departed.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

partente (m. s.), departing.

partenti (p.), departing.

Past.

partito (m. s.),
partita (f. s.), departed.

partiti (p.),
partite (p.), departed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

parto, I depart.

io partiva, Imperfect.

Perfect.

partii, I departed.

partirò, Future.
I shall or will depart.

* The past participle of the neuter verbs that are varied with *essere*, agrees with the subject of the verb in gender and number.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Second Perfect.
io sono partito, -a, I have departed.

Pluperfect.
io era partito, -a, I had departed.

Second Pluperfect.
io fui partito, -a, I had departed.

Future Anterior.
sarò partito, -a, I shall have departed.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.
che io parta, that I depart.

Imperfect.
che io partissi, if I departed.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.
che io sia partito, -a, that I have departed.

Pluperfect.
che io fossi partito, -a, if I had departed.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Past.
partirei, I should, would, or could depart, or might depart.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Present.
sarei partito, I should, would, or could have departed, or might have departed.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

parti tu, depart thou.

VARIATION OF PRONOMINAL VERBS.

Pronominal verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, to be, according to the conjugation to which their termination belongs.

Variation of the Reflective Verb Pentirsi.

PARADIGM OF THE PRONOMINAL VERBS.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>pentir-si,</i>	<i>Present.</i> to repent one's self.	<i>Past.</i> <i>esser-si pentito,</i> to have repented one's self.
-------------------	--	---

GERUND.

<i>pentendo-si,</i>	<i>Present.</i> repenting one's self.	<i>Past.</i> <i>essendo-si pentito,</i> having repented one's self.
---------------------	--	--

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

pentente-si (s.), repenting one's self.

Past.

pentito-si (m. s.), *pentiti-si* (p.), having repented one's self.
pentita-si (f. s.), *pentite-si* (p.), having repented one's self.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

<i>io mi pento,</i> <i>ti penti,</i> <i>si pente,</i>	I repent myself. thou repentest thyself. he repents himself.	<i>noi ci pentiamo,</i> <i>vi pentite,</i> <i>si pentono,</i>	we repent ourselves. you repent yourselves. they repent themselves.
---	--	---	---

Imperfect.

mi pentiva, I repented myself.

Perfect.

mi pentii,

I repented myself.

Future.

mi pentirò,

I shall repent myself.

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>Second Perfect.</i> <i>mi sono pentito, -a, I have repented myself.</i>	<i>Pluperfect.</i> <i>mi era pentito, -a, I had repented myself.</i>
<i>Second Pluperfect.</i> <i>mi fui pentito, -a, I had repented myself.</i>	<i>Future Anterior.</i> <i>mi sarò pentito, -a, I shall or will have repented myself.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<i>Present.</i> <i>che mi penta, that I repent myself.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i> <i>che mi pentissi, if I repented myself.</i>
---	--

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>Perfect.</i> <i>che mi sia pentito, -a, that I have repented myself.</i>	<i>Pluperfect.</i> <i>che mi fossi pentito, -a, if I had repented myself.</i>
--	--

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

mi pentirei, I should, would, or could repent myself.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

mi sarei pentito, -a, I should, would, or could have repented myself.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>penti-ti, repent thyself.</i>	<i>pentiamo-ci, let us repent ourselves.</i>
<i>si penta or penta-si, let him repent himself.</i>	<i>pentite-vi, repent yourselves.</i>
	<i>si pentano, or let them repent themselves.</i>
	<i>pentan-si,</i>

A great number of active and neuter verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.*, either in the objective or in the relation of attribution: and then these verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, to be; as, *Lodare*, to praise; *dare*, to give; *tacere*, to keep silent:—

<i>mi sono dato un colpo,</i>	<i>I have given [to] myself a blow.</i>
<i>ti sei dato per vinto,</i>	<i>thou hast given thyself up as conquered.</i>
<i>si è lodato,</i>	<i>he has praised himself.</i>
<i>ci siamo taciuti,</i>	<i>we have kept ourselves silent.</i>

Usage, however, in some instances, allows us also to employ the auxiliary *avere*, to have: but then the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si*, are always in the relation of attribution; as,—

<i>me lo sono or me l' ho goduto,</i>	<i>I have enjoyed it.</i>
<i>te lo sei or te l' hai creduto,</i>	<i>thou hast believed it.</i>
<i>se l' è or se l' ha bevuto,</i>	<i>he has drunk it.</i>

VARIATION OF UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Unipersonal verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary *avere*, to have, according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the Verb Pióvere.

PARADIGM OF THE UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>pióvere,</i>	<i>Present.</i> to rain.	|	<i>avere piováto,</i>	<i>Past.</i> to have rained.
-----------------	-----------------------------	--	-----------------------	---------------------------------

GERUND.

<i>piovéndo,</i>	<i>Present.</i> raining.	|	<i>avéndo piováto,</i>	<i>Past.</i> having rained.
------------------	-----------------------------	--	------------------------	--------------------------------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Past.</i> <i>piováto,</i> rained.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<i>piove,</i>	<i>Present.</i> it rains.	|	<i>piovéva,</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i> it rained.
<i>piovè, pióvètte,</i>	<i>Perfect.</i> it rained.	|	<i>pioverà,</i>	<i>Future.</i> it will rain.

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>ha piováto,</i>	<i>Second Perfect.</i> it has rained.	|	<i>avéva piováto,</i>	<i>Pluperfect.</i> it had rained.
<i>ebbe piováto,</i>	<i>Second Pluperfect.</i> it had rained.	|	<i>avrà piováto,</i>	<i>Future Anterior.</i> it will have rained

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i>
<i>che piova,</i> that it rains.	<i>che piovesse,</i> if it rained.

COMPOUND TENSES.

<i>Perfect.</i>	<i>Pluperfect.</i>
<i>che abbia piovuto,</i> that it has rained.	<i>che avesse piovuto,</i> if it had rained.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

pioverebbe (pioveria), it would or could rain, or might rain.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

avrebbe piovuto, it would or could have rained, or might have rained.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

piova, let it rain.

The following are the unipersonal verbs most in use:—

<i>aggiornare,</i>	to be day.	<i>gelare,</i>	to freeze.
<i>annottare,</i>	to grow night.	<i>ghiacciare,</i>	" "
<i>balenare,</i>	to lighten.	<i>dighiacciare,</i>	to thaw.
<i>lampeggiare,</i>	" "	<i>far freddo,</i>	to be cold.
<i>tuonare,</i>	to thunder.	<i>far chiaro,</i>	to be light.
<i>nevicare,</i>	to snow.	<i>far buio,</i>	to be dark.
<i>grandinare,</i>	to hail.	<i>far caldo,</i>	to be hot.
<i>tempestare,</i>	" "	<i>far vento,</i>	to be windy.
<i>piovere,</i>	to rain.	<i>far buon tempo,</i>	to be good weather.
<i>diluviare,</i>	to rain very hard, to deluge.	<i>far cattivo tempo,</i>	to be bad weather.

Essere, to be, is also used unipersonally, both in the singular and plural, when it is joined to the particles *ci* or *vi*; as, *Esserci* or *esservi*, to be here, or to be there. It is varied as follows:—

Variation of the Verb *Éssere*, unipersonally used.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

ésser-ci or *ésser-vi*, to be here, or to be there.

Past.

ésser-ci or *ésser-vi státo* (m. s.), (*státi* (p.), *státa* (f. s.), *státe* (p.)), to have been there

GERUND.

Present.

esséndo-ci, or *esséndo-vi*, there being.

Past.

esséndo-ci or *esséndo-vi státo* (m. s.), (*státi* (p.), *státa* (f. s.), *státe* (p.)), there having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

c' é or *v' é*, here is, or there is. | *ci sôno* or *vi sôno*, there are.

Imperfect.

c' éra or *v' éra*, there was. | *c' érano* or *v' érano*, there were.

Perfect.

ci fu or *vi fu*, there was. | *ci fûrono* or *vi fûrono*, there were.

Future.

ci sard or *vi sard*, there shall be. | *ci saránno* or *vi saránno*, there shall be.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Second Perfect.

c' é or *v' é státo* (m.), -a (f.), there has been.
ci sôno or *vi sôno, státi* (m.), -e (f.), there have been.

Pluperfect.

c' éra or *v' éra státo*, -a, there had been.
c' érano or *v' érano státi* -e, there had been.

Future Anterior.

ci sard or *vi sard státo*, -a, there will have been.
ci saránno or *vi saránno státi*, -e, there will have been.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Present.

che ci sia or vi sia, that there be or may be.
che ci siano, vi siano or ci sieno, vi sieno, that there be or may be.

Imperfect.

ci fösse or vi fösse, if there were or should be.
ci fössero or vi fössero, if there were or should be.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Perfect.

ci sia or vi sia státo, -a, that there has been.
ci siano or vi siano státi, -e, that there have been or may have been.

Pluperfect.

ci fösse or vi fösse státo, -a, if there had been.
ci fössero or vi fössero státi, -e, if there had been.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Present.

ci sarébbe or vi sarébbe, there should, would, or could be, or might be.
ci sarébbéro or vi sarébbéro, there should, would, or could be, or might be.

COMPOUND TENSE.

Past.

ci sarébbe or vi sarébbe státo, -a, there should, would, or could have been.
ci sarébbéro or vi sarébbéro státi, -e, there should, would, or could have been.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

ci sia, vi sia, or sia-ci, sia-vi, let there be.
ci siano, vi sieno, or sian-ci, sien-vi, let there be.

The verb *avére*, to have, is often substituted for the verb *essere* when unipersonally used, and then it is varied after the same manner; as, *Avérci* or *avérvi*, to be here or to be there; *ci ha* or *vi ha*, here is or there is; *ci hánno* or *vi hánno*, there are; etc.

The verb *avére* not only may be used with propriety for the verb *essere*, but it is also elegantly used in the singular, although the noun to which it is joined is in the plural; as, *Quánte míglia ci HA?* how many miles is it? *ÉBBEVI mólti uómini*, there were a great many men there; etc.

To express in Italian "here or there is some of it," "here or there are some of them," we join the particle *ne*, of it, of them, to *ci* or *vi*, and say, *éssercene* or *ésservene*.

Irregular Verbs.

THE irregularities of Italian Verbs are chiefly confined to the perfect tense of the indicative mood, and to the past participle.

Some verbs, however, are also irregular in the present of the indicative; and then they are irregular likewise in the present of the subjunctive and in the imperative.

When verbs are contracted in the infinitive mood, they are contracted also in the future tense and in the conditional mood.

In those tenses in which verbs are irregular, the irregularity, generally, does not extend to all the persons. Thus, with very few exceptions, in the perfect of the indicative, the second person singular, and the first and second persons plural; and in the present of the indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative, the first and second persons plural, — are regular.

In the variation of these verbs, we will give only those tenses in which they depart from the paradigms already given, to which we must refer for the formation of the other tenses. The persons which are irregular are here printed in small capitals.

For the assistance of learners, we have added to each verb the auxiliary with which it is varied in its compound tenses.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

There are but four simple verbs in the first conjugation, which are not varied like *am re*; viz.: —

and re,
d re,

to go.
to give.

f re,
st re,

to do, or to make.
to be, to dwell, to
stand, or to stay.

Andáre (*varied with Éssere*).**INFINITIVE MOOD.***andáre*, to go.**GERUND.***andádo*, going.**PARTICIPLE.***andáto*, gone.**INDICATIVE MOOD.***Present.*

VO or VÁDO,*
VÁI,
VA,

I go or am going.
thou goest.
he goes.

| andiámo,
andáte,
VÁNNO,

we go.
you go.
they go.

*Future.**andré* (by contraction for *anderé*), I shall or will go.**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.***Present.*

is VÁDA,
is VÁDA (*vádi*),
égü VÁDA,

that I go or may go.
that thou go.
that he go.

| andiámo,
andáte,
VÁDANO,

that we go.
that you go.
that they go.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.*Present.**andréi* (*andria*), by contraction for *anderéi* (*anderta*), I should, would, or could go.**IMPERATIVE MOOD.**

VA (*vá'*) is,
VÁDA *égü*,

go thou.
let him go.

| andiámo *nói*,
andáte *vói*,
VÁDANO *égüno*,

let us go.
go ye.
let them go.

Andáre is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*, and the particle *ne*; thus, ME NE *vo*, I go hence; TE NE *vái*, thou goest hence; etc. *Me*, *te*, etc., are then mere expletives.

Riandáre, signifying to examine, or to go over again; and *trasandáre*, to go beyond, — are regular and varied like *amáre*.

* *Andáre* is also a defective verb, and borrows these forms from the Latin verb *vádere*.

Dare (*varied with Avére*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

dare, to give.

GERUND.

dando, giving.

PARTICIPLE.

dato, given.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.*do,
DÁI,
da,I give or am giving.
thou givest.
he gives.diámo,
dáte,
DÁNNO,we give.
you give.
they give.*Perfect.*DÉTTI or DIÉDI,
DÉSTI,
DÉTTE or DIÉDE,I gave or did give.
thou gavest.
he gave.DÉMMO,
DÉSTE,
DÉTTERO,we gave.
you gave.
they gave.*Future.*

DARÒ, I shall or will give

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*to DÍA,
tu DÍA or DÍI,
egli DÍA,that I give.
that thou give.
that he give.diámo,
diáte,
DÍANO or DÍENO,that we give.
that you give.
that they give.*Imperfect.*

to DÉSSI, if I gave or should give.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.*DARÉI (*daria*), I should, would, or could give, or might give.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

dà (*dà'*) tu,
DÍA egli,give thou.
let him give.diámo noi,
dáte voi,
DÍANO,let us give.
give ye.
let them give.

The compounds of *dare* — as, *ridare*, to give again; *addarsi*, to devote one's self; etc. — have the same irregularities.

Fáre (*varied with Avére*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

FÁRE (*fácere*),* to do, or to make.

GERUND.

facéndo, doing.

PARTICIPLE.

FÁTTO, done.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

fo (*faccio*),
FÁI (*fáci*),
fa (*face*),

I do or am doing.
thou doest.
he does.

FACCIÁMO,
fáte,
FÁNNO (*fán*),

we do.
you do.
they do.

Imperfect.

to *faceva* or *facea* (*fée*), I did or was doing

Perfect.

FÉCI (*féi*),
FACÉSTI (*fésti*),
FÉCE (*fé', fée*),

I did.
thou didst.
he did.

facemmo (*fémmo*),
faceste (*féste*),
FÉCERO (*férono*),

we did.
you did.
they did

Future.

FARÒ, I shall or will do.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to **FÁCCIA**,
tu **FÁCCIA**,
egli **FÁCCIA**,

that I do or may do.
that thou do.
that he do.

FACCIÁMO,
FACCIÁTE,
FACCIANO,

that we do.
that you do.
that they do.

Imperfect.

to *faceSSI* (*féssi*), if I did or should do.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

FARÈI (*faria, fare'*), I should, would, or could do, or might do.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

fa (*fà'*) tu,
FÁCCIA egli,

do thou.
let him do.

FACCIÁMO,
fáte,
FACCIANO,

let us do.
do ye.
let them do.

The compounds of *fáre* — as, *assuefáre*, to accustom; *confáre*, to suit, to agree; *contraffáre*, to mimic, to imitate; *disfáre*, to undo; *misfáre*, to do wrong; etc. — have the same irregularities. *Sodisfáre*, or *soddisfáre*, to satisfy, is both regular and irregular.

* This verb belongs properly to the second conjugation; it being but a contraction of *fácers*, now become obsolete, of which it retains many of the forms.

Stàre (*varied with Èssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present.

Stàre, to stand, to stay, to dwell, or to be.

GERUND.

stàndo, standing.

PARTICIPLE.

stàto, stood.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.*sto,
stái,
sta,I stand.
thou standest.
he stands.stàmo,
stàte,
stàmo,we stand.
you stand.
they stand*Perfect.*stétti (stéi),
stésti,
stétte (sté),I stood.
thou stoodst.
he stood.stémmo,
stéste,
stéttero (stéro),we stood.
you stood.
they stood.*Future.*

starò, I shall or will stand.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*io stia,
tu stia or stii,
egli stia,that I stand.
that thou stand.
that he stand.stiamo,
stiate,
stiano or stieno,that we stand
that you stand
that they stand*Imperfect.*

io stéssi, if I stood or should stand.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.*staréi (*staria*), I should, would, or could stand, or might stand.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sta (stá) tu,
stia egli,stand thou.
let him stand.stiamo,
státe,
stiano or stienolet us stand.
stand ye.
égli, let them stand.

Stâre is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc., and the particle *ne* : thus, *ME NE sto*, I remain here ; *TE NE stâi*, thou remainest here ; etc. *Me*, *te*, etc., are then mere expletives.

Contrastâre, signifying to deny, to dispute ; *soprastâre* or *sov-rastâre*, signifying to stand over, to threaten ; *ostâre*, to oppose ; *restâre*, to remain, — are *regular*, and are varied like *amâre*.

The foregoing verbs, *andâre*, *dâre*, *fâre*, and *stâre*, in all those forms in which, when they are simple, they make but one syllable, have, in their compounds, the grave accent on the last syllable ; as, *vo*, *da*, *fe'*, *sta* : *Rivò*, I go again ; *ridà*, he gives back again ; *disfè'*, he destroyed ; *instà*, entreat thou ; etc.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ère (long).

The simple irregular verbs in *ère* (long) are the following, viz. : —

<i>cadère</i> ,	to fall.	<i>rimanère</i> ,	to remain.
<i>dissuadère</i> ,	to dissuade.	<i>sapère</i> ,	to know.
<i>dolère</i> ,	to grieve.	<i>sedère</i> ,	to sit down.
<i>dovère</i> ,	to owe.	<i>tacère</i> ,	to be or keep silent.
<i>giacère</i> ,	to lie down.	<i>tenère</i> ,	to hold.
<i>parère</i> ,	to seem.	<i>valère</i> ,	to be worth.
<i>persuadère</i> ,	to persuade.	<i>vedère</i> ,	to see.
<i>piacère</i> ,	to please.	<i>volère</i> ,	to wish, to will, or
<i>potère</i> ,	to be able.		to be willing.

Cadére (*varied with Éssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

cadére, to fall.

PARTICIPLE.

cadúto, fallen.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**cádo* (*cággio*),
cádi,
cáde,I fall.
thou fallest.
he falls.*cadíamo* (*caggiámo*),
cadéte,
cádono (*caggiono*),we fall.
you fall.
they fall.*Perfect.**CÁDDI* (*cadéti, cadétti*), I fell.
cadésti,
CÁDDE (*cadéto*),thou fellest.
he fell.*cadémmo*,
cadéste,
CÁDDERO (*cadéro, cadér*), they fell.we fell.
you fell.
they fell.*Future.**caderrò* (*cadrò*), I shall or will fall.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.**io cáda*,
tu cáda,
egli cáda,that I fall or may fall.
that thou fall.
that he fall.*cadíamo* (*caggiámo*),
cadíate (*caggiáte*),
cádano (*caggiano*),that we fall.
that you fall.
that they fall.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.**caderréi* (*cadréi, cadéria, cadría*), I should, would, or could fall, or might fall.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

cádi tu, fall thou.Dissuadére (*varied with either Avére or Éssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

dissuadére, to dissuade

PARTICIPLE.

DISSUÁSO, dissuaded.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Perfect.**DISSUÁSI*,
dissuadésti,
DISSUÁSE,I dissuaded.
thou dissuadest.
he dissuaded.*dissuadémmo*,
dissuadéste,
DISSUÁSERO,we dissuaded.
you dissuaded.
they dissuaded.

Dissuadére, properly speaking, is a compound of the Latin verb *suadére*, as well as *persuadére*, to persuade, which has the same irregularities.

Dolére (varied with *Éssere*, and the *Conjunctive Pronouns*, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc.).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

dolér-si, to grieve.

PARTICIPLE.

doláto-si, grieved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>mi DÓLGO</i> (<i>dógljo</i>),	I grieve.	<i>ci DOGLIÁMO</i> (<i>doléme</i>),	we grieve.
<i>ti DUÓLI</i> ,	thou grieveſt.	<i>vi doléte</i> ,	you grieve.
<i>ſi DUÓLE</i> (<i>dóle</i>),	he grieves.	<i>ſi DÓLGANO</i> (<i>dóghjano</i>),	they grieve.

Perfect.

<i>mi DÓLSI</i> ,	I grieved.	<i>ci dolémme</i> ,	we grieved.
<i>ti doléſti</i> ,	thou grievedſt.	<i>vi doléſte</i> ,	you grieved.
<i>ſi DÓLSI</i> ,	he grieved.	<i>ſi DÓLSERO</i> ,	they grieved.

Future.

dorrò (by contraction for *dolerò* *), I ſhall or will grieve.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>mi DÓLGA</i> (<i>dóglja</i>),	that I grieve.	<i>ci DOGLIÁMO</i> ,	that we grieve.
<i>ti DÓLGA</i> (<i>dóglja</i>),	that thou grieveſt.	<i>vi DOGLIÁTE</i> ,	that you grieve
<i>ſi DÓLGA</i> (<i>dóglja</i>),	that he grieve.	<i>ſi DÓLGANO</i> (<i>dóghjano</i>),	that they grieve.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

dorréi (*dorria*), by contraction for *doleréti* (*doleria*), † I ſhould, would, or could grieve.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>DUÓLI-ti</i> ,	grieve thou.	<i>DOGLIÁMO-ci</i> ,	let us grieve.
<i>ſi DÓLGA</i> (<i>dóglja</i>),	let him grieve.	<i>doléte-vi</i> ,	grieve ye.
		<i>ſi DÓLGANO</i> (<i>dóghjano</i>),	let them grieve.

The compounds of *dolére* — as, *condolére*, to condole, etc. — have the ſame irregularities,

* To diſtinguiſh it from *dolerò*, future of the verb *dolére*, to defraud.

† To diſtinguiſh them from *doleréti* (*doleria*), forms of the conditional of the verb *dolére*, to defraud.

Dovere (*varied with Avère*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

dovere (*dovère* *), to owe.

PARTICIPLE.

dovuto, owed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

devo or *DÈBBO* (*dèggio*), I owe.
dévi (*déi*), thou owest.
dévo or *DÈBBE* (*dés dé'*), he owes.

DOBBIAMO (*debbiamo*), we owe.
dovete, you owe.
dévono or *DÈBBONO*, they owe.

*Perfect.**dovetti* or *dovetti*, I owed.**Future.**doverò* or *dovrò*, I shall or will owe.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io DÈBBA (*dèggia*),
tu DÈBBA (*dèggia*),
egli DÈBBA (*dèggia*),

that I owe.
 that thou owe.
 that he owe.

DOBBIAMO (*deggiamo*), that we owe.
DOBBIATE (*deggiate*), that you owe.
DÈBBANO (*dèggiano*), that they owe.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.**doverèi* or *dovrèi* (*doveria* or *dovria*), I should, would, or could owe, or might owe.IMPERATIVE MOOD (*wanting*).

* The Latin *debere*, from which *dovere* derives some of its forms.

Giacére (varied with either *Avére* or *Éssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

giacére, to lie down.

PARTICIPLE.

giaciúto, lain down.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

GIÁCCIO,
giáci,
giáce,

I lie down.
thou liest down.
he lies down.

GIACCIÁMO,
giacéte,
GIACCIONO,

we lie down.
you lie down.
they lie down.

Perfect.

GIÁCQUI,
giacésti,
GIÁCQUE,

I lay down.
thou layest down.
he lay down.

giacémmo,
giacéste,
GIACQUERO,

we lay down.
you lay down.
they lay down.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io GIÁCCIA,
tu GIÁCCIA,
egli GIÁCCIA,

that I lie down.
that thou lie down.
that he lie down.

GIACCIÁMO,
giacéste,
GIACCIAANO,

that we lie down.
that you lie down.
that they lie down.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

giáci tu,
GIÁCCIA *égli*,

lie thou down.
let him lie down.

GIACCIÁMO *nói*,
giacéte voi,
GIACCIAANO *égliáo*,

let us lie down.
lie ye down.
let them lie down.

The compounds of *giacére* (as, *soggiacére*, to be subject, etc.), as well as *piacére* and its compounds (*compiacére*, to please; *dispiacére*, to displease; etc.), have the same irregularities.

Piacére, and its compounds *compiacére*, etc., in the second person plural of the present of the subjunctive, and in the second person plural of the imperative mood, make *PIACCIÁTE*, etc.

Parére (*varied with Éssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

parére, to seem.

PARTICIPLE.

parúto (pá so), seemed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**PAIO,
pári,
páre (pár),**I seem.
thou seemest.
he seems.**pariámo,
paréte,
párono, or PAIONO,**we seem.
you seem.
they seem.**Perfect.**PÁRVI (pársi),
parésti,
PÁRVE (páve),**I seemed.
thou seemedst.
he seemed.**parémmo,
paréste,
PÁRVERO (pársero),**we seemed.
you seemed.
they seemed.**Future.**parró (by contraction for parerò *), I shall or will seem.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.**io PÁIA,
tu PÁIA,
egli PÁIA,**that I seem.
that thou seem
that he seem.**pariámo,
pariáte,
PÁIANO,**that we seem.
that you seem.
that they seem.*

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.**parréi (parria), by contraction for pareréi (pareriat), I should, would, or could seem,*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**pári tu,
PÁIA egli,**seem thou.
let him seem.**pariámo noi,
paréte voi,
PÁIANO egli no,**let us seem.
seem ye.
let them seem.*

Persuadére.

(See "Dissuadére," p. 220.)

Piacére.

*(See "Giacére," p. 223.)** To distinguish it from *parerò*, future of the verb *parére*, to parry, to adorn.† To distinguish them from *pareréi* (*pareria*), corresponding forms of the verb *parére*, to parry, etc.

Potére (*varied with either Ayére or Éssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Potére, to be able.

PARTICIPLE.

potéto, been able.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

PÓSSO,	I am able.	POSSIAMO,	we are able.
PUÓI (<i>puó?</i>),	thou art able.	<i>potéto</i> ,	you are able.
PUÒ (<i>puóto, póto</i>),	he is able.	PÓSSONO (<i>pónno</i>),	they are able.

Future.

potré (by contraction for *poterò*),* I shall or will be able.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

PÓSSA, that I be able, or may be able.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

<i>potréi</i> (<i>potria</i>), by contraction for <i>poteréi</i> (<i>poteria</i> ,† <i>poria</i>),	I should, would, or could be able, or might be able.
---	--

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*wanting*).

* To distinguish it from *poterò*, future of the verb *potére*, to prune.

† To distinguish them from *poteréi* (*poteria*), corresponding forms of the verb *potére*, to prune.

Rimanére (*varied with Èssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

rimanére, to remain.

PARTICIPLE.

RIMÁSTO (*rimáso*), remained.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.*RIMÁNGO (*rimángo*),
rimáni,
rimáne,I remain.
thou remainest.
he remains.*rimaniámo*,
rimanète,
RIMÁNGONO,we remain.
you remain.
they remain.*Perfect.*RIMÁSI,
rimanèsti,
RIMÁSE,I remained.
thou remainedst.
he remained.*rimaniámo*,
rimanète,
RIMÁSEONO,we remained.
you remained.
they remained.*Future.**rimarrò* (by contraction for *rimanerò*), I shall or will remain.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

*Present.*to RIMÁNGA (*rimagna*), that I remain.
tu RIMÁNGA (*rimagna*), that thou remain.
egli RIMÁNGA, that he remain.*rimaniámo*,
rimaniáte.
RIMÁNGANO,that we remain.
that you remain.
that they remain.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.**rimarréi* (*rimarría*), by contraction for *rimanaréi* (*rimanaría*),

I should, would, or could remain, or might remain.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

rimáni tu,
RIMÁNGA *egli*,remain thou.
let him remain.*rimaniámo noi*,
rimanète voi,
RIMÁNGANO *egli*no, let us remain
remain ye.
let them remain

Sapére (varied with Avére).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

sapére, to know.

PARTICIPLE.

sapéto, known.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

SO,
SÁI,
SA (*sápe*),

I know.
thou knowest.
he knows.

SAPPIÁMO,
sapéte,
SÁNNO,

we know.
you know.
they know.

Perfect.

SÉPPI,
sapéstti,
SÉFFE,

I knew.
thou knewest
he knew.

sapénmo,
sapéste,
SÉFFERO,

we knew.
you knew.
they knew.

Future.

saprò (by contraction for *sapérò*), I shall or will know.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to SÁPPIA, that I know, or may know.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

sapréi (*sapria*), by contraction for *sapéréi*
(*saperia*),

I should, would, or could know, or might know.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SÁPPI *tu*,
SÁPPIA *egli*,

know thou.
let him know.

SAPPIÁMO *nói*, let us know.
SAPPIÁTE *vói*, know ye.
SAPPIÁNO *egli*, let them know.

The compounds of *sapére* — as *risapére*, to learn, or to come to know — follow the same irregularities.

Sedere (varied with *Avère*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

sedere (*séggere* *), to sit down.

GERUND.

sedendo (*seggendo*), sitting.

PARTICIPLE.

seduto, seated.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.*SIÈDO OR SÈGGO,
SIÈDI,
SIÈDE (*sède*),I sit.
thou sittest.
he sits.sediamo,
sedete,
siedono,we sit.
you sit.
they sit.*Perfect.**sedei* or *sedetti*, I sat.*Future.**sederò* (*sedrò*), I shall or will sit.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*io SIÈDA OR SÈGGA; that I sit, or may sit.
tu SIÈDA OR SÈGGA, that thou sit.
egli SIÈDA OR SÈGGA, that he sit.sediamo or SEGGIAMO,
sediate (*seggiate*),
siedano or SÈGGANO,that we sit.
that you sit.
that they sit

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.**sedereti* (*sedreti*, *sederia*), I should, would, or could sit, or might sit.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SIÈDI tu, sit thou.
SIÈDA OR SÈGGA egli, let him sit.sediamo or (*seggiamo*) noi, let us sit.
sedete voi, sit ye.
siedano egli, let them sit.

Sedere is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc., and then it requires the auxiliary *essere*; as, *mi sièdo*, I sit (myself); *ti sei seduto*, thou hast sat (thyself); etc.

The compounds of *sedere* — as, *possedere*, to possess; *residere*, to reside; *sopersedere*, to supersede — have the same irregularities.

* This verb, now become obsolete, is still used in many of the forms of the modern verb *sedere*.

Tacére (varied with Avére).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

tacere, to be or keep silent.

PARTICIPLE.

taciuto, been silent.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

tácio (tácio), I am silent.

Perfect.

TÁCQUI,
tacésti,
TÁCQUE,

I was silent.
thou wast silent.
he was silent.

tacémmo,
tacéste,
TÁCQUEBO,

we were silent.
you were silent.
they were silent.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to tácia (tácía), that I be silent or may be silent.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

taceréi, I should, would, or could be silent.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

táci tu, be thou silent.

Tacére is sometimes varied with the pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc., and then it requires the auxiliary *essere*: *mi tácio*, I keep silent; *si è taciuto*, he has kept silent; &c.

The compound of *tacére* — *ritacére*, to become once more silent — follows the same irregularities.

Tenére (*varied with Avère*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

tenere, to hold.

PARTICIPLE.

tenuto, holden.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

TÈNGO (<i>tégno</i>), TIÈNI (<i>tégni</i>), TIÈNE,	I hold. thou holdest. he holds.	<i>teniamo</i> (<i>tegnàmo</i>), <i>tenete</i> , TÈNGONO,	we hold. you hold. they hold.
--	---------------------------------------	---	-------------------------------------

Perfect.

TÈNNI, <i>tenésti</i> , TÈNNE,	I held. thou heldest. he held.	<i>tenémmo</i> , <i>tenéste</i> , TÈNNERO,	we held. you held. they held.
--------------------------------------	--------------------------------------	--	-------------------------------------

Future.

terrò (by contraction for *tenerò*), I shall or will hold.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io TÈNGA (<i>tégna</i>), tu TÈNGA, egli TÈNGA (<i>tégna</i>),	-that I hold. that thou hold. that he hold.	<i>teniamo</i> (<i>tegnàmo</i>), <i>teniate</i> (<i>tegnàte</i>), TÈNGANO (<i>tegnano</i>),	that we hold. that you hold. that they hold.
---	---	---	--

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

<i>terrèi</i> (<i>terria</i>), by contraction for <i>tenerèi</i> (<i>teneria</i>),	I should, would, or could hold, or might hold.
---	--

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

TIÈNI (<i>té</i>) tu.	hold thou.	<i>teniamo</i> (<i>tegnàmo</i>) <i>nói</i> ,	let us hold.
TÈNGA (<i>tégna</i>) <i>egli</i> ,	let him hold.	<i>tenete vói</i> , TÈNGANO <i>églino</i> ,	hold ye. let them hold.

Tenére is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc., and then it requires the auxiliary *essere*; as, *mi sono tenuto*, I have holden or restrained myself; etc.

Valére (*varied with either Avére or Éssere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

valére, to be worth or to avail.

PARTICIPLE.

valáto (*válso*), been worth.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

VÁLGO (*váglio*),
váli,
vále (*vál*),

I am worth.
thou art worth.
he is worth.

valíamo,
valéte,
VÁLGONO,

we are worth.
you are worth.
they are worth.

Perfect.

VÁLSEI,
valésti,
VÁLSE,

I was worth.
thou wast worth.
he was worth.

valémmo,
valéste,
VÁLSERO,

we were worth.
you were worth.
they were worth.

Future.

carré (by contraction for *caleré*), I shall or will be worth.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io VÁLGA or VÁGLIA, that I be worth.
tu VÁLGA or VÁGLIA, that thou be worth.
egli VÁLGA or VÁGLIA, that he be worth.

valíamo,
valiáte.
VÁLGANO,

that we be worth.
that you be worth.
that they be worth.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

carréi (*carria*), by contraction for *valeréi*
(*valeria*).

I should, would, or could be worth, or
might be worth.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

váli tu, be thou worth.
VÁLGA (*váglia*) *egli*, let him be worth.

valíamo nói,
valéte vói,
VÁLGANO *égli-no*,

let us be worth.
be ye worth.
let them be worth.

Vedere (*varied with Avére*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

vedere, to see.

GERUND.

vedendo or *veggendo*, seeing.

PARTICIPLE.

veduto (*visto*), seen.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**vedo*, *VEGGO*,
vedi (*ve'*),
vede,I see.
thou seest.
he sees.*vediamo* or *VEGGIAMO*,
vedete,
vedono or *VEGGONO*,we see.
you see.
they see.*Perfect.**vidi* (*viddi*),
vedesti,
vide,I saw.
thou sawest.
he saw.*vedemmo*,
vedeste,
videro, (*vider*),we saw.
you saw.
they saw.*Future.**vedrò* (by contraction for *vederò*), I shall or will see.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*to *veda* or *VEGGA*,
tu *veda* or *VEGGA*,
egli veda or *VEGGA*,that I see or may see.
that thou see.
that he see.*vediamo* or *VEGGIAMO*,
vediate or *VEGGIATE*,
vedano or *VEGGANO*,that we see.
that you see.
that they see.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

*Present.**vedrèi* (*vedria*), by contraction for *vederèi*
(*vederia*),I should, would, or could see, or might
see.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

vedi (*ve'*) tu, see thou.
veda or *VEGGA egli*, let him see.*vediamo noi*,
vedete voi,
vedano egli,let us see.
see ye.
let them see.

Volére (*varied with Avére*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

volére, to wish, to will, or to be willing.

PARTICIPLE.

volúto, been willing.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

VÓGLIO or VÓ',
VUÓI (*vuóti, vuó'*),
VUÓLE (*vóle*),

I am willing.
thou art willing.
he is willing.

VOGLIÁMO (*volémo*), we are willing.
voléte, you are willing.
VÓGLIONO (*vónno*), they are willing.

Perfect.

VÓLLI,
volésti,
VÓLLE,

I was willing.
thou wast willing.
he was willing.

volémmo, we were willing.
voléste, you were willing.
VÓLLERO, they were willing.

Future.

vorré (by contraction for *voléré* *), I shall or will be willing

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io VÓGLIA, that I be willing or may be willing.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

vorréi (*vorría*), by contraction for *voléréi*
(*voléria* †),

I should, would, or could be willing, or
might be willing.

IMPERATIVE MOOD (*wanting*).

The compounds of *volére* — as, *disvolére*, to desire the contrary of what one has wished; *rivolére*, to wish again, or to be once more willing — have the same irregularities.

* To distinguish it from the future of the verb *volére*, to fly.

† To distinguish them from the corresponding forms of *volére*, to fly.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

The following are the simple irregular verbs of the third conjugation; viz.,—

<i>dire,</i>	to say or to tell.	<i>udire,</i>	to hear.
<i>morire,</i>	to die.	<i>uscire,</i>	to go out.
<i>salire,</i>	to ascend.	<i>venire,</i>	to come.
<i>seguire,</i>	to follow.		

Dire (*varied with Avère*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

DIRE, to say.

GERUND.

dicendo, saying.

PARTICIPLE.

DETTO (*ditto*), said.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>dico,</i>	I say.	<i>diciamo,</i>	we say.
<i>dici or di,</i>	thou sayest.	<i>dite,</i>	you say.
<i>dice,</i>	he says.	<i>dicono,</i>	they say.

Imperfect.

to *dicéva* or *dicéa*, I said.

Perfect.

<i>dissei,</i>	I said.	<i>dicémmo,</i>	we said.
<i>dicésti,</i>	thou saidst.	<i>dicéste,</i>	you said.
<i>disse,</i>	he said.	<i>dissero,</i>	they said.

Future.

DIRÒ (by contraction for *dicéro*), I shall or will say.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to *dica*, that I say or may say.

Imperfect.

to *dicéssi*, if I said or should say.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

DIREI (*diria*), by contraction for *diceréi* | I should, would, or could say; or might say,

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Df' *tu*,
dica égli,

say thou.
let him say.

diciámo nói,
DITE vói,
dicano églino,

let us say.
say ye.
let them say.

The compounds of *dire* — as, *ridire*, to say again; *contradire* or *contraddire*, to contradict; *interdire*, to forbid; *bendire*, to speak well of; *maldire*, to speak ill of — have the same irregularities.

Benedire, to bless, and *maledire*, to curse, in the *perfect*, are both regular and irregular, and make *benedüi* or *benedissi*, I blessed; *maledüi* or *maledissi*, I cursed.

Morire (*varied with Essere*). *

INFINITIVE MOOD.

morire, to die.

PARTICIPLE.

morto, dead.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

MUÓRO (*móio*),
MUÓRI,
MUÓRE (*muór*),

I die.
thou diest.
he dies.

moriámo,

morite,

MUÓRONO (*muóiono*),

we die.
you die.
they die.

Future.

morirò or *morrò*, I shall or will die

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io MUÓRA (*móia*),
tu MUÓRA (*móra*),
egli MUÓRA (*móra*),

that I die or may die.
that thou die.
that he die.

moriámo,

moriate,

MUÓRANO (*muórano*),

that we die.
that you die.
that they die.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

moriréi or *morréi* (*moriría* or *morría*), I should, would, or could die, or might die.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

MUÓRI *tu*, die thou.
MUÓRA (*móra*) *egli*, let him die.

moriámo *noi*,

morite *voi*,

MUÓRANO *egliano*,

let us die.

die ye.

let them die.

The compounds of *morire* — as, *premorire*, to die before, etc. — have the same irregularities.

* *Morire* may be varied also with *avere*; but it then takes the nature of an active verb, and signifies "to kill," and not "to die."

Salire (varied with either *Avère* or *Essere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

salire (*sagire* *), to ascend.

PARTICIPLE.

salito, ascended.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

SÁLGO (*ságlio*), I ascend.
sáli or *salisci* (*ságli*), thou ascendest.
sále or *salisce* (*ságlie*), he ascends.

saliamo or *sagliamo*, we ascend.
salite, you ascend.
SÁLGONO (*ságliono*), they ascend.

Perfect.

salí (*sálsi*), I ascended.
salisti, thou ascendedst.
salí (*sálse*, *saño*), he ascended.

salimmo, we ascended.
saliste, you ascended.
salirono (*salíro*, *salir*), they ascended.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to *SÁLGA* (*sághe*), that I ascend.
tu *SÁLGA* (*sághé*), that thou ascend.
egli *SÁLGA* or *salisca*, that he ascend.

saliamo or *sagliamo*, that we ascend.
saliate or *sagliate*, that you ascend.
SÁLGANO (*ságlino*), that they ascend.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sáli or *salisci* tu, ascend thou.
SÁLGA or *salisca* egli, let him ascend.

saliamo noi, let us ascend.
salite voi, ascend ye.
SÁLGANO *églino*, let them ascend.

The compounds of *salire* — as, *risalire*, to re-ascend; *assalire*, to assail; etc. — have the same irregularities.

* From this verb, now become obsolete, are derived many of the forms of the modern verb *salire*.

Seguire (*varied with either Avére or Essere*)

INFINITIVE MOOD.

seguire, to follow.

PARTICIPLE.

seguito, followed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>seguo</i> or <i>SIÉGUO</i> ,	I follow.	<i>seguiamo</i> ,	we follow.
<i>segui</i> or <i>SIÉGUI</i> ,	thou followest.	<i>seguite</i> ,	you follow.
<i>segue</i> or <i>SIÉGUE</i> ,	he follows.	<i>seguono</i> or <i>SIÉGUONO</i> ,	they follow.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

<i>io ségua</i> or <i>SIÉGUA</i> ,	that I follow.	<i>seguiamo</i> ,	that we follow.
<i>tu ségua</i> or <i>SIÉGUA</i> ,	that thou followest.	<i>seguiate</i> ,	that you follow.
<i>egli ségua</i> or <i>SIÉGUA</i> ,	that he follow.	<i>seguano</i> or <i>SIÉGUANO</i> ,	that they follow.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

<i>segui</i> or <i>SIÉGUI tu</i> ,	follow thou.	<i>seguiamo noi</i> ,	let us follow.
<i>segua</i> or <i>SIÉGUA egli</i> ,	let him follow.	<i>seguite voi</i> ,	follow ye.
		<i>seguano egli</i>	let them follow.

The compounds of *seguire* have the same irregularities.

Uđire (*varied with Avére*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

uđire (*ođire*), to hear.

PARTICIPLE.

uđito, heard.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

ÓDO,
ÓDI,
ÓDE,

I hear.
thou hearest.
he hears.

uđiamo,
uđite,
ÓDOHO,

we hear.
you hear.
they hear.

Future.

uđiró or *uđrô*, I shall or will hear.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to ÓDA,
tu ÓDA (*ódi*),
égli ÓDA,

that I hear or may hear.
that thou hear.
that he hear.

uđiamo,
uđite,
ÓDANO,

that we hear.
that you hear.
that they hear.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

uđirés or *uđréc* (*uđiría* or *uđría*), I should, would, or could hear, or might hear.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

ÓDI tu,
ÓDA *égli*,

hear thou.
let him hear.

uđiamo nói,
uđite vói,
ÓDANO *égliáo*,

let us hear.
hear ye.
let them hear.

The compounds of *uđire* — as, *riúđire*, to hear again, etc. — have the same irregularities.

Esuđire, to grant, is regular, and varied like *esibire*.

Uscire (*varied with Essere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

uscire (*escire*), to go out.

PARTICIPLE.

uscito, gone out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

*Present.*ESCO,
ESCI,
ESCE,I go out.
thou goest out.
he goes out.usciamo,
uscite,
ESCONO,we go out.
you go out.
they go out.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*io ESCA,
tu ESCA,
egli ESCA,that I go out or may go out.
that thou go out.
that he go out.usciamo,
usciate,
ESCANO,that we go out.
that you go out.
that they go out.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

ESCI tu,
ESCA egli,go thou out.
let him go out.usciamo noi,
uscite voi,
ESCANO egliu,let us go out.
go ye out.
let them go out.

The compound of *uscire* — *riuscire*, to succeed — has the same irregularities.

Venire (*varied with Essere*).

INFINITIVE MOOD.

venire, to come.

PARTICIPLE.

VENÛTO, come.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

VENGO (*vegno*), I come.
VIENI, thou comest.
VIENE, he comes.

veniamo (*vegnaio*), we come.
venite, you come.
VENGONO (*vegno*), they come.

Perfect.

VENNI, I came.
venisti, thou camest,
VENNE, he came.

venimmo, we came.
veniste, you came.
VENNERO (*veniro*), they came.

Future.

verrò (by contraction for *venirò*), I shall or will come.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

io VENGÀ, that I come or may come.
tu VENGÀ, that thou come.
egli VENGÀ, that he come.

veniamo (*vegnaio*), that we come.
veniate (*vegnaie*), that you come.
VENGANO (*vegnaio*), that they come.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

verrei (*verria*), by contraction for *venirei*
(*veniria*),

I should, would, or could come, or might come.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

VIENI tu, come thou.
VENGÀ egli, let him come.

veniamo noi, let us come.
venite voi, come ye.
VENGANO egli, let them come.

Venire is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, etc., and the particle *ne*: thus, ME NE *vegno*, I am coming thence; TE NE *vièni*, thou art coming thence, etc. *Me*, *te*, etc., are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *venire* — as, *convenire*, to agree; *divenire*, to become; etc. — have the same irregularities.

TABLE OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	PERFECT.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
Accendere, <i>to light</i>	accéndo	accési	accenderò	accésso
Accórgersi, <i>to perceive</i>	m' accórgo	m' accórsi	m' accorgerò	accórto
Addurre, <i>to allege</i>	addúco	addússi	addurrò	addóto
(Addúcere), <i>to allege</i>			(adducere)	(addúto)
Affliggere, <i>to afflict</i>	affliggo	afflissi	affliggerò	afflito
Ancidere, <i>to kill</i>	ancido	ancisi	anciderò	anciso
Andare, <i>to go</i>	vádo (vo)	andái	andrò	andáto
Apparire, <i>to appear</i>	apparisco	apparíi	apparirò	apparito
(Appárrere), <i>to appear</i>	(appáro)	appárvi	apparerò	appárrso
	(appájo)	(appársi)		(appárrto)
Appartenere, <i>to belong</i>	apparténgo	apparténni	apparterrò	appartenúto
		(appartenétti)	apparterenò	
Applaudire, <i>to applaud</i>	applaudisco	applaudíi	applaudirò	applaudito
(Appláudere), <i>to applaud</i>	appláudo	(appláusi)	appláuderò	(appláuso)
Aprire, <i>to open</i>	ápbro	apríi, apérsi	aprirò	áperto
Ardere, <i>to burn</i>	árdo	ársi	arderò	árso
Ascendere, <i>to ascend</i>	ascéndo	ascési	ascenderò	ascésso
		ascendéi		
		ascendétti		
Ascondere, <i>to conceal</i>	ascóndo	ascósi	asconderò	ascóso, ascósto
Aspérgere, <i>to sprinkle</i>	aspérgo	aspérsi	aspergerò	aspérrso
Assidere, } <i>to sit down</i>	assido	assisi	assiderò	assiso
(Assédere), }				
Assistere, <i>to assist</i>	assisto	assistéi	assistereò	assistito
Assolvere, <i>to absolve</i>	assólvo	assolvéi	assolverò	assólúto
Assórbire, <i>to absorb</i>	assorbisco	assorbíi	assorberò	assorbíto
(Assórbere), <i>to absorb</i>	(assórbo)	(assórsi?)		
Assumere, <i>to assume</i>	assúmo	assúnsi	assumerò	assúnto
Astringere, <i>to compel</i>	astringo	astrínsi	astringerò	astrétto
(Astrígnere), <i>to compel</i>	(astrigno)		(astrígnereò)	
Attendere, <i>to wait</i>	atténdo	attési.	attenderò	atténto
Avére, <i>to have</i>	ho	ébbi	avrò	avúto
Avvèllere, <i>to root up</i>	avvélló	avvélsi	avvellerò	avvéltó
Bévere, <i>to drink</i>	bévo	bévvi, bevéi	beverò, bevrrò	bevúto, beúto
(Bére), <i>to drink</i>	(bíbo), béo	(bébbi)	(berò)	
Bollire, <i>to boil</i>	bóllo	bolíi	bolirò	bolíto
Cadére, <i>to fall</i>	cádo (cággio)	cáddi, cadéi	caderrò, cadrrò	cadúto
Calére, <i>to care for</i>	cále	cálse	calerà (carrà)	calúto
Capére, <i>to comprehend</i>	cápo	capéi (capétti)	caperrò, capírrò	capúto, capíto
(Capíre), <i>to comprehend</i>	(capisco)	capíi		
Cédere, <i>to submit</i>	cédo	cedéi, céssi	cederrò	cedúto, céssso
Chiedére, <i>to ask</i>	chiédo	chiési	chiederrò	chiéstó
Chiúdere, <i>to shut</i>	chiúdo	chiúsi	chiuderò	chiúso
Cígnere, <i>to gird</i>	cíngo	cínsi	cíngerò	cínto
(Cígnere), <i>to gird</i>				
Cógliere, } <i>to gather</i>	cóglío, cólgo	cólsi	coglierò, corrò	cóltó
(Córre), }				
Cómplere, <i>to accomplish</i>	cómpio	compíei	compierrò	compiúto
(Cómplre), <i>to accomplish</i>		compíi		
Concepire, <i>to conceive</i>	concepisco	concepíi	conceperò	concepíto
(Concépere), <i>to conceive</i>	(concipio)	(concepétti)	(conceperò)	concepúto
Connétere, <i>to connect</i>	connétto	connetéi	connetterò	connéssso
		(connéssi)		(connettúto)
Conoscere, <i>to know</i>	conóscó	conóbbi	conoscerò	conosciúto
		(conoscétti)		
Consumáre, * } <i>to consume</i>	consúmo	consúnsi	consumerò	consúnto
(Consumére), }				
Coprire, <i>to cover</i>	cópro	copríi, copérsi	coprirò	copérto

* This verb is regular.

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	PERFECT.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>Córrere, to run</i>	córró	córai	oorrerò	córsó
<i>Costringere, to constrain</i>	costringo	costrinsi	costringerò	costrétto
<i>(Costringere), to constrain</i>	costringo		(costringerò)	
<i>Crêscere, to grow</i>	crêscó	crêbbi	crêscerò	crêscinto
		(crêscétti)		
<i>Cuócere, to cook</i>	cuóco	cóssi (cocéi)	cocerò	cótto
<i>Dàre, to give</i>	dó	diédi, diéi	darò	dàto
<i>Decidere, to decide</i>	decido	decisi (?)	deciderò	deciso
<i>Deludere, to delude</i>	delúdo	delúsi	deluderò	delúso
<i>Deprimere, to depress</i>	deprimo	depréssi	deprimerò	depréssó
<i>Difendere, to defend</i>	difendo	difési	difenderò	diféssó
<i>Dire, to say</i>	dico	dissi	dirò	détto
<i>Dirigere, to direct</i>	dirigo	diréssi	dirigerò	dirétto
<i>Discendere, to descend</i>	discendo	discéai	discenderò	discéso
<i>Dispersere, to disperse</i>	dispérso	dispérai	disperserò	dispérsó
<i>Distinguere, to distinguish</i>	distinguo	distinsi	distinguerò	distinto
		(distinguétti)		
<i>Divedere, to</i>	divédo	dividi	divedrò	divéduto
		(dividéi)		(divísio)
<i>Divellere, to root out</i>	divéllo	divélsi	divellerò	divéltó
		(divérrò)		
<i>Dolere, to grieve</i>	dólgo, dóglío	dólsi	dorrò	dolúto (dólto)
<i>Dovère, to owe</i>	débbo, devo	dovéi, dovétti	dovrò	dovúto
<i>(Dovère), to owe</i>	(déó)	(devéi)	(doverò)	
<i>Emergere, to emerge</i>	emérso	emérai	emergerò	emérso
<i>Erigere, erigere, to erect</i>	érigo, érso	éressi, érsi	erigerò, ergerò	érétto (értó)
<i>Esigere, to exact</i>	esigo	esigéi	esigerò	esátto
<i>Expellere, to expel</i>	espéllo	espúlsi	espellerò	espúlso
<i>Esponere, to expose</i>	espóngo	espósi	esporrò	espósto
<i>(Esporre), to expose</i>	(espóno)	(espuósi)	(esponerò)	(esposito)
<i>Esprimere, to express</i>	esprimo	espréssi	esprimerò	espréssó
<i>Essere, to be</i>	sóno	fúí	sarò	státto
<i>Estendere, to extend</i>	esténdo	estési	estenderò	estéso
		(estendétti)		
<i>Estinguere, to extinguish</i>	estinguo	estinsi	estingnerò	estinto
<i>Facere or fare, to do</i>	fo (faccio)	féci (féi)	farò	fatto
<i>Fendere, to cleave</i>	féndo	féndei (féssi)	fenderò	féso
<i>Figere or figgere, to fix</i>	figo, figgo	fissi (fisi)	figerò, figgerò	fitto, fisso, fiso
<i>Figere or figgere, to feign</i>	figo (figno)	finsi	fignerò	finto (fitto)
<i>Fondere, to melt</i>	fóndo	fúsi (fondéi)	fonderò	fúso, fondúto
<i>Frangere, } to break</i>	frángo	fránsi	frangerò	fránto
<i>(Frangere), }</i>				
<i>Friggere, to fry</i>	friggo	frissi	friggerò	fritto
<i>Genuflectere, to kneel</i>	genuflettó	genuflessi	genufletterò	genuflessó
<i>Giacere, to lie down</i>	giaccio	giacqui	giacerò	giaciúto
		(giacétti)		
<i>Gire, to go</i>		gíí	girò	(gíto)
<i>Glângere, to arrive</i>	giúngo	giúnsi	giungerò	giúnto
<i>Glângere, to arrive</i>		godétti, godéi		
<i>Godere (gaudere), to enjoy</i>	gódo		goderò	godúto
<i>Illudere, to delude</i>	illúso	illúsi	illuderò	illúso
<i>Immergere, to immerse</i>	immérso	immérai	immergerò	immérso
<i>Impellere, to impel</i>	impéllo	impúlsi	impe'llerò	impúlso
<i>Imprimere, to print</i>	imprimo	impréssi	imprimerò	impréssó
<i>Incidere, to grave</i>	incido	incisi	inciderò	inciso
<i>Incórrere, to incur</i>	incórró	incórsi	incorrerò	incórsó
<i>Increscere, to be sorry</i>	incrésco	incrébbi	increscerò	incresciúto
		(increscétti)		
<i>Intendere, to understand</i>	inténdo	intési	intenderò	intéso, inténto
<i>Intéssere, to weare</i>	intéssó	intesséi	intesserò	intessúto
<i>Intridere, to temper</i>	intrido	intrisi	intriderò	intriso
<i>Intrudere, to intrude</i>	intrúdo	intrúsi	intruderò	intrúso
<i>Invadere, to invade</i>	invádo	invási	invaderò	invásó
<i>Involgere, to wrap up</i>	invólgo	invólasi	involverò	invólúto
<i>Involgere, to wrap up</i>	invólvo		involverò	
<i>Ire, to go</i>			irò	íto
<i>Irridere, to deride</i>	irrido	irrisi	irriderò	irrisó

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	PERFECT.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
Iscrivere, <i>to inscribe</i>	iscrivo	iscrissi	iscriverò	iscritto
Istruire, <i>to instruct</i>	istruisco	istruisi	istruirò	istruito
Ledere, <i>to offend</i>	ledo	ledéi (ledéi)	lederò	lésso
Leggere, <i>to read</i>	leggo	leggéi (leggéi)	leggerò	létto
(Licere), <i>to be lawful</i>	lice, léce			(licéto) lecito
Maledicere, <i>to curse</i>	maledico	maledéssi	maledirò	maledétto
Maledire, <i>to curse</i>				
(Maladire), <i>to curse</i>				
Mérgere, <i>to dive</i>	mérge	mérasi	mergerò	méreo
Méscere, <i>to mix</i>	mésco	mescéi	mescerò	(mesciúto)
Méttere, <i>to put</i>	métto	misí, (mésai)	metterò	mésso (misso)
Mólcere, <i>to assuage</i>	2d pers. móci			
Mórdere, <i>to bite</i>	3d pers. móce			
	mórdo	mórasi	morderò	móreo
Morire, <i>to die</i>	{ muóro, méro	morí	morirò, morrò	mórto
	{ muójo, méjo			
Múgere, <i>to milk</i>	múngo	múnsi	mugnerò	múnto
Múgere, <i>to milk</i>				
Múovere, <i>to move</i>	muévo	muévi (movéi)	moverò	múeo
Náscere, <i>to be born</i>	násco	náscui	nascerò	náto
Nascóndere, <i>to conceal</i>	nascóndo	nascósi	nascónderò	nascóto
Negligere, <i>to neglect</i>	negligo	negligéi	negligerò	neglétto
Nuócere, <i>to hurt</i>	nuóce, nocéio	nocui	nocerò	nocéiúto
(Nócere), <i>to hurt</i>				
Offéndere, <i>to offend</i>	offéndo	offéssi	offenderò	offéso
Offérire, <i>to offer</i>	offerisco	offeríi	offerirò, offerirò	
Offíre, <i>to offer</i>	offéro	offérsi	(offerirò)	offértto
(Offerere), <i>to offer</i>	óffro			
Opprimere, <i>to oppress</i>	opprimo	oppréssi	opprimerò	oppréso
Parére, <i>to appear</i>	pájo (páro)	párví (pársi)	parrò (parerò)	parúto (pársio)
Páscere, <i>to feed</i>	páscio	pascéi	pascerò	pasciúto
Percuóttere, <i>to strike</i>	percuóto	percóssi	percuoterò	percóso
Pérdere, <i>to lose</i>	pérdo	perdéi	perderò	perdúto
Persuádere, <i>to persuade</i>	persuádo	persuásui	persuaderò	persuásio
		(persuadéi)		(persuadúto)
Plácere, <i>to please</i>	piácio, piácio	piácui	piacerò	piaciúto
Piangere, <i>to weep</i>	piángo, piángio	piansi	piangerò	piánto
Plagnere, <i>to weep</i>				
Píngere, <i>to paint</i>	pingo	pinéi	pingerò	pínto (pítto)
Pióvere, <i>to rain</i>	pióvo	pióvvi, pióvéi	pioverò	piovúto
(Póvere) or pórrre, <i>to put</i>	póngo (póno)	pósi (puéi)	porrò	póto
Pórgere, <i>to offer</i>	pórgo	pórsi	porgerò	pórtto
Potére, <i>to be able</i>	póssio	potéi, potétti	potrò (poterò)	potúto
		(possétti)	(porò)	
Precidere, <i>to shorten</i>	precido	precisi	preciderò	preciso
Prémere, <i>to press</i>	prémo	préméi	premerò	premiúto
Préndere, <i>to take</i>	préndo	prési	prenderò	préto
Presúmere, <i>to presume</i>	presúmo	presúsi	presumerò	presúntto
Protéggere, <i>to protect</i>	protéggo	protéssi (?)	proteggerò	protétto
Púngere, púgnere, <i>to prick</i>	púngo	púnsi	pungerò	púntto
Rádere, <i>to shave</i>	rádo	rási (radéi)	raderò	rásio
Recidere, <i>to retrench</i>	recido	recisi	reciderò	reciso
Redimere, <i>to redeem</i>	redimo	rediméi	redimerò	redéntto
Réggere, <i>to govern</i>	réggio	rési	reggerò	réttto
Réndere, <i>to render</i>	réndio	rendéi	renderò	rendúto (résio)
Repéllere, <i>to repel</i>	repélio	repúlsi	repellerò	repúso
Reprimere, <i>to repress</i>	reprimio	représsi	reprimerò	représo
Rideré, <i>to laugh</i>	rido	risi (ridéi)		risio
Rilúcere, <i>to shine</i>	rilúco	rilússi	rilucérò	
Rimanére, <i>to remain</i>	rimángo	rimási	rimarrò	rimásio
Risólvere, <i>to resolve</i>	risólvio	risólsi, risolvéi	risolverò	risóltto
Rispóndere, <i>to answer</i>	rispóndo	rispósi	risponderò	rispóto
Ristáre, <i>to desist</i>	risto	ristétti	ristarò	ristáto
Ristringere, <i>to restrain</i>	ristringo	ristrinsi	ristringerrò	ristréttto
Ristignere, <i>to restrain</i>				
Ródere, <i>to gnaw</i>	ródo	rósi	roderrò	róso

INFINITIVE.	PRESENT.	PERFECT.	FUTURE.	PARTICIPLE.
Rompere, <i>to break</i>	rómbo	rúppi (róppi)	romperò	róttö
Salire, <i>to ascend</i>	sálgo, salisco	salíi (sálsi)	salirò (sarrò)	salito
Sapere, <i>to know</i>	so (sáppo)	séppi (sapéi)	saprò (saperò)	sapúto
Scegliere (scérre), <i>to choose</i>	scéigo, scéglio	scelái	sceglierò	scelto
Scendere, <i>to descend</i>	scéndo	acési (acendéi)	scenderò	scéso
Scindere, <i>to cleave</i>	scindo	acinaí	scinderò	sciaso
Scignere, } <i>to ungird</i>	scigno, scingo	scinaí	scignerò	scinto
(Scingere),				
Sciogliere, } <i>to untie</i>	scióglio	sciólai	scioglierò	sciálto
Sciórre,				
Scórgerre, } <i>to perceive</i>	scórgo	scórsi	scorgerò	scórto
Scórre,	scórro	scórsi	scorrerò	scórto
Scrivere, <i>to lay waste</i>	scrivo (scribo)	scriasi	scriverò	scritto
Scuotere, <i>to write</i>	scuóto (scóto)	scóssi (scotéi)	scoterò	scéso
Sedere, <i>to shake</i>	siédo, séggo	sedéi, sedétti	sederò (sedrò)	sedúto
Seguire, <i>to sit down</i>	segúo, sieguo	seguií	seguirò	seguito
Serpere, <i>to follow</i>	serpo	serpáva		serpénte
Soffrire, } <i>to creep</i>	sóffro	soffríi	soffrirò	soffórto
(Sofferrere),				
Solere, <i>to suffer</i>	sóligo	sóno, solito		solito
Solvere, <i>to be wont</i>	sólvo	sólvei	solverò	solúto
Sorgere (surgere), <i>to solve</i>	sórgo (súrgo)	sórsi (súrsi)	sorgerò	sórto (súrto)
Sospendere, <i>to arise</i>	sospéndo	sospéssi	sospenderò	sospéso
Spandere, <i>to suspend</i>	spándo	spandéi	spanderò	spandúto
Spargere, <i>to pour out</i>	spárgo	spársi	spargerò	spársio
Spégnere, } <i>to spread</i>	spéngo	spénsi	spegnerò	spénte
Spégnere,				
Spéndere, } <i>to extinguish</i>	spéndo	spési	spenderò	spéso
Spégnere,	spérgo	spérsi	spengerò	spérso
Spingere, } <i>to push</i>	spingo	spínsi	spingerò	spinto
(Spignere),				
Stare, <i>to stand</i>	sto	stétti (stéi)	starò (sterò)	státo
Stendere, <i>to extend</i>	sténdo	stéssi (stendéi)	stenderò	stéso
Stridere, <i>to cry out</i>	strido	stridéi	striderò	
Stignere, } <i>to stain</i>	stingo (stigno)	stinsi	(stignerò)	stinto
Stingere,				
Stringere, } <i>to bind fast</i>	stringo	strínsi	stringerò	strétto
Strignere,				
Strúggere, <i>to dissolve</i>	strúggo,	strússi	struggerò	strútto
Svellere, } <i>to root up</i>	svéllo, svéigo	svélsi	svellerò	svéito
Svellere,				
Súggere, <i>to suck</i>	súggo	súggi (sússi)	suggerò	taciúto
Tacere, <i>to be silent</i>	tácio (tácio)	tacqui (tacéi)	tacerò	téso
Tendere, <i>to tend</i>	téndo	tési (tendéi)	tenderò	tenúto
Tenere, <i>to hold</i>	téngo (téngo)	ténni (tenéi)	terrò (temerò)	tessúto
Tessere, <i>to weave</i>	téso	tesseí	tesserò	tinto
Tignere, tingere, <i>to dye</i>	tingo (tigno)	tínsi	tignerò	
Togliere, } <i>to take away</i>	tóggio, tóigo	tólsi	torrò	táito
Tórre,				
Tóndere, <i>to shear</i>	tóndo	tondéi	tonderò	tondúto
Tórcere, <i>to twist</i>	tóreo	tórsi	torcerò	tórto
Tórperre, <i>to be benumbed</i>	tórpo			torpénte
Trarre, } <i>to draw</i>	trággio (tráo)	trássi	trarrò	trátto
(Tráere),				
(Trággere),				
Uccidere, <i>to kill</i>	uccído	uccíssi	ucciderò	ucciso
Udire, <i>to hear</i>	ódo	udíi	udirò (udrò)	uditó
Ugnere, úgnere, <i>to anoint</i>	úngo (úngo)	únsi	ungerò	únto
Uscire, <i>to go out</i>	éso	uscíi (escíi)	uscirò	uscito (escito)
Valere, <i>to be worth</i>	válgo (váglio)	válsi (valéi)	varrò (valerò)	valúto (válto)
Vedere, <i>to see</i>	védo, véggo	vídí (véddí)	vedrò	vedúto (vísto)
Venire, <i>to come</i>	véngo	vénni (veníi)	verrò (venirò)	venúto (vénto)
Vincere, <i>to conquer</i>	vínco	vínsi	vincerò	vinto (vítto)
Vivere, <i>to live</i>	vivo	víssi (vivéi)	viverò	vivúto
Volere, <i>to will</i>	vóggio, vó'	vólsi (vólsi)	vorrò	volúto
Volvere, <i>to turn</i>	vóigo	vólsi	volgerò	vólto
Vólgere, <i>to turn</i>	vólvo		volverò	

Defective Verbs.

Defective Verbs ending in ěre (long), accented.

<i>calěre,</i>	to care for.	<i>pavěre,</i>	to fear.
<i>colěre</i> or <i>colere,</i>	to adore.	<i>silěre,</i>	to be or keep silent.
<i>lecěre</i> and <i>licěre,</i> }	to be lawful.	<i>solěre,</i>	to be wont.
<i>lěcere</i> and <i>licere,</i> }		<i>stupěre,</i>	to be astonished.

Defective Verbs ending in ěre (short).

<i>alĝere,</i>	to be chill.	<i>riědere,</i>	to return.
<i>angere,</i>	to afflict.	<i>sěrpere,</i>	to creep.
<i>arrĝgere,</i>	to add.	<i>soffĝlcere,</i> }	to support.
<i>cdpere,</i>	to contain.	<i>soffĝlyere,</i> }	
<i>chěrere,</i>	to ask.	<i>tangere,</i>	to touch.
<i>convěllere,</i>	to convulse.	<i>tollere,</i>	to take away.
<i>fiědere,</i>	to wound.	<i>tĝrpere,</i>	to be benumbed.
<i>licere,</i>	to shine.	<i>urgere,</i>	to urge.
<i>mĝlcere,</i>	to assuage.	<i>vĝgere,</i>	to be vigorous.

Defective Verbs ending in ĩre.

<i>ĩre,</i>	to go.
<i>gĩre,</i>	to go.
<i>olĩre,</i>	to smell.

VARIATION OF DEFECTIVE VERBS.

(These verbs are used only in the tenses and persons which are here given.)

Calére.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>calére,</i>	<i>Present.</i> to care for.	| <i>éssere calúto,</i>	<i>Past.</i> to have cared for.
----------------	---------------------------------	-----------------------	------------------------------------

GERUND.

caléndo, caring for.

PARTICIPLE.

calúto, cared for.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

<i>cále</i> or <i>cál</i> ,	<i>Present.</i> he cares for.	| <i>caléva</i> or <i>caléa</i> ,	<i>Imperfect.</i> he cared for.
<i>Perfect.</i>			
<i>CÁLSE</i> , he cared for.			

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

<i>CÁGLIA</i> ,	<i>Present.</i> that he care for.	| <i>calésse</i> ,	<i>Imperfect.</i> if he cared for.
-----------------	--------------------------------------	------------------	---------------------------------------

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

CÁGLIA égli, let him care for.

Calére is generally used with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *çi*, *vi*, *gli*: thus, *mi cále*, I care for; *çi caléva*, we cared for; etc.

Colére or Cólere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

colère or **colere**, to adore.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

(c610),
(c61e h

I adore.
he adores.

[illegible]

Lecére and Licére, or Lécere and Lícere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

lectre and licére,

to be lawful.

to be lawful. | *essere lecito* or *lícito*,* to be lawful.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

léce or Ace, it is lawful.

Pavé.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

pávère, to fear.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

páve, he fears.

Silére.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

***silere*, to be or keep silent.**

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present

sli,
sile,

thou art *or* keepest silent.
he is *or* keeps silent.

[illegible]

* From this form are derived *é lécito*, it is lawful; *era* or *fu lécito*, it was lawful; *será lécito*, it will be lawful; etc., which are used to supply the tenses in which *lectre* is defective.

Solére:

INFINITIVE MOOD.

solére,

to be wont.

| *éssere solito,*

to be wont.

GERUND.

soléndo, being wont.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

SÓGLIO,
SUÓLI,
SUÓLE (*sóle*),

I am wont.
thou art wont.
he is wont.

| SOGLIÁMO (*soléno*),
soléte,
SÓGLIOMO,

we are wont.
you are wont.
they are wont.

Imperfect.

to *solétra* or *soléa*, I was wont.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

to SÓGLIA, that I am wont or may be wont.

Imperfect.

to *soléssi*, if I were wont or should be wont.

Stupére.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

stupére, to be astonished.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

stúpe, he is astonished.

Álgere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

álgere, to be chill.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Perfect.

álsi,
algésti,
álse,

I was chill.
thou wast chill.
he was chill.

| *algémma,*
algéste,
álsero,

we were chill.
you were chill.
they were chill.

Ángere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ángere, to afflict.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.
ángé, it afflicts.

Imperfect.
ángéva, it afflicted.

Arrógere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

arrógere, to add.

GERUND.

arrógendo, adding.

PARTICIPLE.

ARRÓTO or ARRÓBO, added.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

arróge,

he adds.

arrógámo,
arrógono,

we add.
they add.

Imperfect.

to *arrógéva* or *arrógéa*, I added

Perfect.

ARRÓSI,
arrógésti,
ARRÓSE,

I added.
thou addedst.
he added.

arrógémmo,
arrógéste,
ARRÓSERO,

we added.
you added.
they added.

Cápere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

cápere, to contain.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.
cápe, it contains.

Imperfect.
capéva, it contained.

Chérere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

chérere, to ask.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

chéro,
chère,

I ask.
he asks.

| : : : : : : : : : :

Convéllere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

convéllere, to convulse.

GERUND.

convelléndo, convulsing.

PARTICIPLE.

CONVÚLSO, convulsed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

convéllé,

he convulses.

| *convélléno,*

they convulse.

Imperfect.

convelléva or *-léa,*

he convulsed.

| *convellévano* or *-léano,* they convulsed.

Future.

convellerá,

he shall convulse.

| *convelleráno,*

they shall convulse.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Imperfect.

convellésse,

if he convulsed.

| *convellésse,*

if they convulsed.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

convellerébe,

he should convulse.

| *convellerébero,*

they should convulse.

Fidere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

fidere, to wound.

GERUND.

fidendo, wounding.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**fido,*
fidi,
*fide,*I wound.
thou woundest.
he wounds.| . . .
 fidono,.
 they wound.*Imperfect.*to *fiédva* or *fiédta*, I wounded.*Perfect.**fiédi*, I wounded.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.*to *fiéda* (*fiéggia*),
égli *fiédia* (*fiéggia*),that I wound.
that he wound.| *fiédano,*

that they wound.

*Imperfect.*to *fiédessi*, if I wounded.

Lúcere.

INFINITIVE MOOD

lúcere, to shine.

GERUND.

lúcendo, shining.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

lúci,
lúce,

thou shinest.
he shines.

lucátamo,
lucéte,
.

we shine.
you shine.
.

Imperfect.

to *lucéva*, I shone.

Perfect.

lucésti,

thou shinest.

lucétamo,
lucéste,

we shone.
you shone.

Future.

lucéro, I shall or will shine.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

ésti (*lúca*),

that he shine.

lucátamo,
lucátate,
(*lúcamo*),

that we shine.
that you shine.
that they shine.

Imperfect.

to *lucéssi*, if I shone or should shine.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

Present.

luceréti (*lucéria*), if I should, would, or could shine, or might shine.

Mólcere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

mólcere, to assuage.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

mólci,
mólcé,

thou assuagest.
he assuages.

to *mólcéva*,
mólcévi,
égli mólcéva,

Imperfect.

I assuaged.
thou assuagedst.
he assuaged.

Ritornare.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ritornare, to return.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**ritorno,*
ritorni,
*ritorna,*I return.
thou returnest.
he returns.: : :
: : :
ritornano,: : : : :
: : : : :
they return.*Imperfect.**io ritornavo or ritornai,*
ritornavi,
*egli ritornava,*I returned.
thou returnedst.
he returned.: : :
: : :
ritornavano,: : : : :
: : : : :
they returned.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.**io ritorni,*
tu ritorni,
*egli ritorni,*that I return.
that thou return.
that he return.: : :
: : :
ritornano,: : : : :
: : : : :
that they return.

Serpere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

serpere, to creep.

GERUND.

serpendo, creeping.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**serpo,*
serpi,
*serpe,*I creep.
thou creepest.
he creeps.: : :
: : :
serpono,: : : : :
: : : : :
they creep.*Imperfect.**io serpevo,*
serpevi,
*egli serpeva,*I crept.
thou creptest.
he crept.: : :
: : :
serpevano,: : : : :
: : : : :
they crept.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.**io serpi,*
tu serpi,
*egli serpi,*that I creep.
that thou creep.
that he creep.: : :
: : :
serpiano,: : : : :
: : : : :
that they creep.

Soffólcere or Soffólger.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

soffólcere or soffólger, to support.

PARTICIPLE.

soffólto, supported.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Perfect.</i>
<i>soffólce or soffólge,</i>	he supports.	<i>soffólce,</i> he supported.

Tángere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

tángere, to touch.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.
tánga, he touches.

Tóllere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

tóllere, to take away.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

	<i>Present.</i>	
<i>tólli,</i>	thou takest away.	: : : : : : : : : :
<i>tólle,</i>	he takes away.	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

	<i>Present.</i>	
<i>tu tólla,</i>	that thou take away.	: : : : : : : : : :
<i>égi tólla.</i>	that he take away.	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

tólla égi, let him take away.

Estóllere (to lift), compound of *tóllere*, is defective only in the participle, and in all the persons of the perfect of the indicative.

Tórperè.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

tórperè, to become numb.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**tórpo,*
*tórpe,*I become numb.
he becomes numb.

| : : : : : : : : : :

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

*Present.**io tórpa,*
tu tórpa,
*egli tórpa,*that I become numb.
that thou become numb.
that he become numb.

| : : : : : : : : : :

Úrgere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

úrgere, to urge.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**úrge*, he urges.*Imperfect.**egli úrgéa* or *úrgéa*, he urged.| *úrgéano*, they urged.

Vígere.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

vígere, to be vigorous.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Present.**víge*, he is vigorous.*Future.**vígérà*, it will be vigorous.

Gíre.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

gíre, to go.

PARTICIPLE.

gíto, gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

.....	.....	|	<i>gítamo,</i>	we go.
.....	.....	|	<i>gíte,</i>	you go.
.....

Imperfect.

gíta or *gía*, I went.

Perfect.

te gíi, I went.

Future.

gírd, I shall or will go.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present.

.....	.....	|	<i>gítamo,</i>	that we go or may go.
.....	.....	|	<i>gítate,</i>	that you go.
.....

Imperfect.

te gízi, if I went or should go.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

gíréi, gírta, I should, would, or could go, or might go.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

.....	.....	|	<i>gítamo,</i>	let us go.
.....	.....	|	<i>gíte,</i>	go ye.

Íre.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

ire, to go.

PARTICIPLE.

ito, gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

ite, you go.

*Imperfect.*to íva,
égli íva,I went.
he went.| itano,
. . .we went.
. . .*Perfect.*

isti,

thou wentest.

| (tro, ir),

they went.

Future..
.
.
.
.| írémo,
iréte,
iráno,we shall or will go.
you will go.
they will go.

CONDITIONAL MOOD.

(irano), they should, would, or could go, or might go.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

ite, go ye.

Olíre.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

olíre, to smell.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

*Imperfect.*to olíva,
olívi,
égli olíva,I smelled.
thou smelledst.
he smelled.| . . .
olívano,.
they smelled.

P R O V E R B S.

A word to the wise is enough,
All that is fair must fade,
A ragged coat finds little credit,

Any thing for a quiet life,
A great liar has need of a good
memory,
An old horse for a young soldier,
A buttered mouth cannot say no,
A good appetite needs no sauce,
A good beginning makes a good
ending,

A barking dog does not bite,
A voluntary burden is no burden,
A gold key opens every door,
A fat kitchen, a lean testament,
A new broom sweeps clean,
Aught is better than naught,
All is not gold that glitters,
A sin confessed is half forgiven,

A little spark kindles a great fire,
A rolling stone gathers no moss,
A little gall makes a great deal of
honey bitter,

As you would have a daughter,
choose a wife,

Anger increases love,
All's well that ends well,
A married man is a caged bird,

An ounce of discretion is worth
more than a pound of knowl-
edge,

A fasting stomach has no ears,
After the horse is stolen, shut the
barn-door,

A bird in the hand is worth two in
the bush,

Bend the tree while it is young,
Better late than never,
Better a happy heart than a full
purse,

Better bend than break,
Better give the wool than the sheep,
Big head and little wit,

A buon intenditor póche paróle.
Bélla cosa tósto è rapíta.
A véste logoráta póca féde vien pres-
táta.

Álla páce si può sacrificár tútto.
A un gran bugiárdo ci vuól buóna
memória.

A giovane soldáto vécchio caválo.
Bócca únta non può dir di no.
Buón appetíto non vuól sálsa.
Buón principío fa buon fine.

Can che abbaía non mórde.
Cárica voluntária non cárica.
Chiáve d'óro ápre ógni pórtá.
Grássá cucína, mágro testaménto.
Granáta nuóva spázza ben la casa.
Méglío è póco che niénte.
Óro non è tútto quel che risplénde.
Peccáto confessáto è mézzo perdo-
náto.

Piccóla favílla accénde gran fuóco.
Piétra móssa non fa múschio.
Póco fiéle fa amáro mólto miéle.

Qual figlia vúoi, tal móglie píglia.

Sdégno auménta amóre.
Tútto è béne che riésce béne.
Uómo ammogliáto, uccélló in gábbia.
Val più un' oncia di discrezióne che
úna líbra di sapére.

Véntre digiúno non óde nessúno.
Dópo che i caválli sóno prési, serrár
la stálla.

È méglío un uccélló in gábbia che
cénto fuóri.

Piéga l'álbero quándo è giovane.
Méglío tárdi che mái.

È méglío il cuór felice che la bórsa
piéna,

È méglío piegáre che rompére.
È méglío dar la lána che la pécora.
Cápo grássó, cervélló mágro.

Bad news travels fast, Counsel is nothing against love, Comparisons are odious, Christmas comes but once in a year, Do what you ought, come what may, Do not count your chickens before they are hatched, Delays are dangerous, Different times, different manners, Drop by drop wears away a stone, Do not look a gift horse in the mouth, Every thing is good in its season, Every dog is a lion at home, Every truth is not good to be told, Every body knows where his shoe pinches, Every one for himself, and God for us all, Every body praises his own saint, Every body's friend, nobody's friend, Every one thinks his own cross the heaviest, Extreme ills, extreme remedies, Friends in need are friends indeed, For a web begun, God sends thread, Fair words, but look to your purse, Four eyes see more than two, Fortune comes to him who seeks her, Forbidden fruit is sweet, Father Modest never was a prior, From those I trust, God guard me; from those I mistrust, I will guard myself, God helps him who helps himself, Give to him that has, Give time, time, God sends meat, and the devil sends cooks, Great griefs are mute, Great smoke, little fire, Gold does not buy every thing, Good wine makes good blood, He who succeeds is reputed wise, He who knows nothing, knows enough if he knows how to be silent, He is blind who cannot see the sun, He who sings drives away sorrow,	Le cattive nuóve volano. Cóntro amóre non è consìglio. I paragóni son tútti odiósi. Natále non viéne che úna vólta l'an- no. Fa quel che dévi, n' arrívi ciò che potrà. Non far cónto dell' uóvo non ancór nátó. L' indugiáre è pericóloso. Áltri témpi, áltri costúmi. A góccia à góccia si trafóra la piétra. A cavál donátó, non guardár in bók- ca. Da stagióne tútto è buóno. Ógni cáne è leóne a cása súa. Ógni véro non è buóno a díre. Ognúno sa dóve la scárpa lo strínge. Ognún per sè, e Dío per tútti. Ognúno lóda il próprio sánto. Amíco d' ognúno, amíco di nessúno. Ad ognúno par più gráve la cróce súa. Ai máli estrémi, estrémi rimédi. A bisógni si conóscón gli amíci. A téla ordíta Dío mánda il filo. Béle paróle, ma guárda la bórsa. Vedón più quattr' ócchi che dúe. Vién la fortúna a chi la procúra. I frútti proibíti sóno dólci. Fra modéstó non fu mái prióre. Da chi mi fído, mi guárdi Iddíó; da chi non mi fído mi guarderò io. Chi s'aiúta, Dío l'aiúta. Dà del túo a chi ha del súo. Dà témpo al témpo. Díó ci mánda la cárne, ma il diávolo i cuóchi. I gran dolóri sóno múti. Gran fúmo, póco arrósto. L'óro non cómpa tútto. Buón víno fa buón sángue. A chi la riésce béne, è tenúto per sávio. Assái sa, chi non sa, se tácer sa. Ben è ciéco chi non véde il sóle. Chi cánta, i suói máli spavénta.
--	---

He who buys in time, buys cheap,

He laughs well who laughs last,
Hear, see, and say nothing, if you
would live in peace,

He is master of another man's life
who is indifferent to his own,

He gives twice who gives in a trice,
He who stands may fall,

He that reckons without his host
must reckon again,

Hell is full of good intentions,
Habit is a second nature,

In at one ear, and out at the other,

Ill weeds grow apace,

Look before you leap,
Like master, like man,

Live, and let live,
Love me, love my dog,
Love rules without law,
Love me little, and love me long,
Love knows not labor,
Let him who is well off stay where
he is,

Long tongue, short hand,
Marry in haste, repent at leisure,
Many a true word spoken in jest,

Much smoke and little fire,
Make me a prophet, and I will make
you rich,

Nothing venture, nothing have,
Nothing is difficult to a willing mind,
Near the church, far from God.

Old reckonings, new disputes,
One enemy is too many, and a hun-
dred friends are too few,

One hand washes the other, and
both hands wash the face,

One word brings another,
One swallow does not make a sum-
mer,

One man warned is as good as two,
Out of sight, out of mind,

Poor as a church mouse,

Poverty has no kin,
Physician, heal thyself,

Pluck the rose and leave the thorns,
Rather hat in hand than hand in
purse,

Roses grow among thorns,

Chi compra a tempo, compra a buon
mercato.

Ride bene che ride l'ultimo.

Odi, vedi e taci se vuoi viver in
pace.

È padrone della vita altrui chi la sua
sprezza.

Chi dà presto, dà il doppio.

Chi è ritto può cadere.

Chi fa il conto senza l'oste, gli con-
vien farlo due volte.

Di buona volontà è pieno l'inferno.

L'abito è una seconda natura.

Dentro da un orecchio e fuori dall'
altro.

La mal erba cresce presto.

Guarda innanzi che tu salti.

Tal padrone, tal servitore.

Vivi, e lascia vivere.

Chi ama me, ama il mio cane.

Amor regge senza legge.

Amami poco, ma continua.

Amor non conosce travaglio.

Chi sta bene non si muova.

Lunga lingua, corta mano.

Chi si marita in fretta, stenta adagio.

Quel che pare burla, ben sovente è
véro.

Molto fumo e poco fuoco.

Fammi indovino, e ti farò ricco.

Chi non s'arrischi non guadagna.

A chi vuole, non è cosa difficile.

Vicino alla chiesa lontan di Dio.

A conti vecchi, contese nuove.

È troppo un nemico, e cento amici
non bastano.

Una mano lava l'altra e tutt' e due
lavano il viso.

Una parola tira l'altra.

Un fiore non fa Primavera.

Un avvertito ne val due.

Lontano dagli occhi, lontano del
cuore.

Povero come un topo in chiesa.

Povertà non ha parenti.

Médico, cura te stesso.

Cogli la rosa, e lascia le spine.

Piuttosto cappello in mano, che
mano alla borsa.

Anco trà le spine nascono le rose.

Saying is one thing, and doing is another,	Áltra cósà è il dâre, áltra il fâre.
Silence gives consent,	Chi táce, acconsénte.
Strike while the iron is hot,	Bátti il férrò quánd è càldo.
See Naples, and then die,	Védi Nápoli e pói muóri.
Savings are the first gain,	Lo sparágno è il primo guadágno.
Seeing is believing,	Chi con l'ócchio véde, di cuór créde.
Second thoughts are best,	Il secóndo pensiéro è il miglióre.
The full belly does not believe in hunger,	Córpo satóllo non créde al digiúno.
To pay one in his own coin,	Pagár úno délla súa própria monéta.
Think much, speak little, and write less,	Pénsa móltò, párla póco, scrívi ménò.
Translators, traitors,	Traduttóri, traditóri.
The weakest goes to the wall,	Sémpre ha tórtò il piú débòle.
They say, is a liar,	Si díce, è mentitóre.
The people's voice, God's voice,	Vóce di pópolo, vúce di Dío.
To fall out of the frying-pan into the fire,	Cadér délla padélla nêlle brágie.
The biter is sometimes bit,	Chi búrla, víen burláto.
The world is governed with little brains,	Con póco cervéllo si govérna il móndo.
True love never grows old,	Amór véro non divénta canúto.
The liar is not believed when he speaks the truth,	Al bugiárdo non si créde la verità.
The workman is known by his work,	All ópera si conósce il maéstro.
There is always a calm before a storm,	La bonáccia burráscà mináccia.
The beard does not make the philosopher,	La bárba non fa il filósofo.
There is no love without jealousy,	Non c'è amór sénza gelosía.
There is no smoke without fire,	Non c'è fúmo sénza fuóco.
The steed is starving whilst the grass is growing,	Méntre l'érbà crésce il cavállo muóre di fáme.
The devil is not so ugly as he is painted,	Il diávolo non è cósi brúttò cóme si dipinge.
The best is the cheapest,	Il miglióre è men càro.
Teaching we learn,	Insegnándo s'impára.
To cast pearls before swine,	Gettár le marghéríte ai pórci.
The earth covers the errors of the physician,	Gli erróri del médico gli cópre la térra.
There is no disputing about tastes,	Dei gústi non se ne dispúta.
The doctor seldom takes medicine,	Di rádo il médico píglia medicína.
The world was not made in one day,	In un giòrno non si fé' Róma.
Tell me the company you keep, and I will tell you what you are,	Dímmi con chi trátti, e ti dirò chi sèi.
Whoever brings, finds the door open for him,	Apérta ha la pórtà chiúnque appórtà.
Where there is a will, there's a way,	A chi vuóle, non máncano módi.
Well begun is half done,	Buón princípìo è la metà dell' ópra.

Who does too much often does little,
Who knows most believes least,
Who comes seldom is welcome,
While there is life, there is hope,
Who knows nothing never doubts,
What's done can't be undone,
What costs little is little valued,
Who judges others condemns him-
self,

Spesso chi troppo fa, poco fa.
Chi più sa, ména créde.
Chi ráro viéne, vién béne.
Finchè v'è fiáto, v'è speránza.
Chi nién-te sa, di nién-te dúbita.
Quel che è fáto non si può disfáre.
Quéllo che cósta póco, si stíma póco.
Chi áltro giúdica se condánna.

IDIOMS.

Non vále un *acca*,
A bell' *ágio*,
Mangiár cárne d' *allódola*,
Fáre álto e bássò,
Amíco da bonáccia,
È all' *artícólo* di mórtè,
Dar la *báia*,
Da *básto* é sèlla,
In un *bátter* d' ócchio,
Dirizzáre il *bécco* ágli sparviéri,
Andáre di *béne* in méglío,
Un uómo da *béne*,
Dir del *béne*,
Mi convién *bér-la*,
Tenér l' ánim-a co' *dé-nti*,
Dal *détto* al fáto v'è un grán *trátto*,

Chi *dórme* non píglia *pésci*,
Quésta *cósa* non m' *éntra*,
Non è *érba* del vóstro órto,
Mangiársi l' *érba* sótto,
Ascónder l' ámo nell' *ésca*,

Le *cóse* sóno in buón *éssere*,
Éssere all' *estrémo* délla *víta*,
Stáre all' *érta*,
Ésser di buóna *bócca*,
Favelláre con le *máni*,
Non avér *fiéle*,
Far *filáre* úno,
Pagár il *fió*,
Dáre ad úno *cárta* *biánca*,
Fra tre *giórni*,

It is not worth a pin.
Leisurely.
To take pleasure in being praised.
To do as one pleases.
A table friend.
He is at the point of death.
To laugh at.
Fit for any thing.
In an instant.
To attempt impossibilities.
To grow better and better.
A good honest man.
To speak well of a person.
I must bear it.
To be almost dead.
To say and to do are two different things.
Idleness begets poverty.
I do not comprehend this.
This is not of your own making.
To spend what one has.
To deceive one under the color of friendship.
Things are in a good way.
To be at the point of death.
To be upon one's guard.
To be a great eater.
To strike.
To be good-natured.
To make one do what you please.
To pay dear for.
To give one full power.
In three days.

Dolersi di *gamba sana*,
 Darla a *gamba*,
 Vincere la *gara*,
 Con bel *garbo*,
 Fare la *gatta morta*,
 Come meglio vi *aggrada*,
 Imbarcarsi *senza biscotto*,

È *impastato* di vizj,
 Vendere all' *incanto*,
 Dar l' *incenso* a' *mórti*,
 Il tuo *inchiestro* non tigne,
 Mostrare altrui *lucide* per lanterne,

In casa sua v'è il *litte* di gallina,

Uno *máno lava* l' *áltra*,
Legarsela al dito,
 Tenere in *libra*,
 Dare in *lince*,
 Venire *manco*,
 Uscir del *monico*,
 Far un *marrone*,
Mettere alla *vela*,
Mirare con la *coda* dell' *occhio*,
 Ti farò *mordere* le *unghie*,
Mutar verso,
 Dar l' *última máno*,
 Fuór di *máno*,
 Essere *alla máno*,
 Avère la *máno*,
 Metter *máno* ad *una cosa*,
 Imbottar *nebbia*,
 Testa di *pollastra*,
 Fare il *bécco* all' *oca*,
Occhio mio,
 In un *batter d' occhio*,
 A *quátr' occhi*,
 Va in *buon ora*,
 Far *orecchie* di *mercante*,
 Tutto' l' *móndo* e *paese*,
 Col *témpo* e *colla paglia* *matúrano*
 le *néspole*,

- Starsi ne' *propii pánni*,
 Cavar le *pénne* *maestre*,
 La *vóstra* *opinione* non mi *quádra*,
Questo è il *quánto*,
 Di *quándo* in *quándo*,
 Dar *nella* *ragnátela*,
 Menar *tutti* a *rastréllò*,
Rénder l' *ánima*,
Ridere agli *ángeli*,
 Ha *póco sale* in *zucca*,

To complain without reason.
 To run away.
 To carry the prize.
 In a civil manner.
 To dissemble.
 As you think fit.
 To undertake a thing without means.
 He is very vicious.
 To sell by auction.
 To make almanacs for the last year.
 Your credit is not good.
 To make one believe that the moon is made of green cheese.
 In his house they always eat of the best.
 To help one another.
 To owe one a spite.
 To keep in suspense.
 To publish.
 To faint.
 To be extravagant.
 To make a mistake.
 To set sail.
 To cast sheep's eyes.
 I'll make you repent it.
 To alter the course of one's life.
 To finish.
 Out of the way.
 To be ready.
 To have the advantage.
 To begin a thing.
 To lose time.
 Giddy brained.
 To finish any work.
 My darling.
 In an instant.
 Face to face.
 God speed you.
 To give no ear.
 One may live everywhere.
 Time brings every thing to maturity.
 To be contented with what one has.
 To take away the best one has.
 I am not of your opinion.
 This is the point.
 Now and then.
 To fall into a snare.
 To use all alike.
 To give up the ghost.
 To laugh at nothing.
 He has not a great deal of judgment.

I a gallína che cánta è quèlla che ha
fatto l'uovo,

Venir la *schirima* alla bocca,
Levársi all' álba de' tafáni,
Chi *tárdi* arríva mále allóggia,

Tenére il piéde in dúe stáffe,
Pigliár gli uccellini,
Uccel da välle,
Ugnér le máni,

Far venír l'acqua all' *ógola*,
Vedére il pel nell' *uovo*,
Dár le *vele* a' vènti,
A *vela* e rémo,
Vendémia méntra hái témpo,
La candéla è al *verde*,
La *verità* sta sémpré a gála,
I miéi affári háanno présó buóna
piéga,

Náscer *vestito*,
Zára a chi tócca,
Far d'úna lancia un zípolo,
Cantáre ad úno la *zolfá*,

The man who is too earnest in jus-
tifying himself is guilty.

To be in a great passion.

To rise late.

Those who come too late must kiss
the cook.

To have two strings to one's bow.

To play the fool.

A sly man.

To bribe one with money.

To make the mouth water.

To be clear-sighted.

To set sail.

With all speed.

Get money while you can.

The candle is almost out.

Truth always prevails at last.

My affairs are going on successfully.

To be born lucky.

Let every one care for himself.

To make a little out of a great deal.

To chide.

ITALIAN AND ENGLISH VOCABULARY.

Abbaglio, mistake.
accanto, aside.
acqua, water.
addosso, on, upon.
affanno, grief.
affatto, entirely.
affetto, good-will, kindness.
ago, needle.
alba, dawn.
albero, tree.
allora, then.
alloro, laurel.
anima, soul.
almeno, at least.
al par, equal, alike.
altéro, proud.
altro, other.
amarézza, bitterness.
ambo, both.
amicizia, friendship.
amico, friend.
amistade, friendship.
amo, fish-hook.
amore, love.
ancella, waiting-maid.
anelito, panting.
anello, a ring.
anima, soul.
animo, courage, mind.
ansanti, panting.
antico, ancient.
aperta, hole, gap.
aquila, eagle.
aratro, plough.
arcano, secret.
ardente, hot, burning.
arena, sand, gravel.
argento, silver.
ascoso, hidden.
aspetto, aspect.
assenndto, sensible.
astante, by-stander.
astro, star.
augelletto, small bird.

dura, gale, breeze.
avello, grave, tomb.
avvenenza, comeliness.
avvenire, future.
avvertenza, precaution.
avviso, advice.

Bacio, a kiss.
balena, whale.
ballo, ball.
bambino, child, infant.
bandito, an outlaw.
bellézza, beauty.
beltà, beauty.
benchè, although.
bicchiere, drinking-glass.
bile, anger, passion.
blando, fair, light.
birbante, vagabond.
bisogno, need, want.
bizzarro, whimsical.
borgo, suburb.
borsa, a purse, bag.
bosco, a wood.
bottéga, shop.
braccio, an arm.
brando, sword.
brezza, cold, breeze.
brina, frost.
bruno, brown, dark.
brutto, ugly.
bugia, a lie.
buoi, oxen.
burrasca, tempest.
burro, butter.

Caccia, hunting.
cagna, dog.
calca, confusion.
calvézza, baldness.
calvo, bald.
calza, stocking.
cambiarulite, broker.
cammino, way, road.
campo, field.

canto, song.
canzone, song.
capanna, cottage.
capelli, pan.
caro, dear.
carne, meat.
carabina, carbine.
carézza, caress.
carnéfica, executioner.
carta, paper.
cascata, cascade.
caso, case.
caténa, chain.
cattedra, cathedral.
cattivo, bad.
cauto, wary, cautious.
cavo, hollow.
céna, supper.
cénere, ashes, cinders.
céppo, stump, log.
céra, wax.
certo, certain, sure.
cetra, cistern.
cervello, brain.
cheto, quiet, still.
chiaro, clear, fair.
chiave, key.
chiarore, brightness, clearness.
china, declivity.
chiodo, nail.
chitarra, guitar.
ciabattino, cobbler.
cibo, food.
cieco, blind.
cié'o, sky, heaven.
cima, top, summit.
cinghiale, a wild boar.
cittadino, citizen.
coda, tail.
cognizione, knowledge.
coznato, brother-in-law.
colazione, breakfast.
colle, hill.
collera, anger.

coltivatore, farmer.
concorrenza, competi-
tion.
contadino, peasant.
conto, account.
contrada, country.
convito, banquet, feast.
coppa, cup.
cortina, curtain.
costume, custom, man-
ner.
cruccio, anguish.
cucina, kitchen.
culla, cradle.
cuore, heart.
cupidigia, covetousness.
cupo, deep.

Dabbene, good, honest.
dandaro, money.
delitto, crime.
debole, weak.
detto, word.
di, day.
difetto, fault.
disgrazia, misfortune.
dogliu, grief, pain.
dolce, sweet.
dolcezza, sweetness.
dono, gift.
donzella, damsel.
dotto, skilful, learned.
droghiere, druggist.
drutto, right, straight.
duolo, grief, pain.

Ebbrezza, drunkenness.
elmo, helmet.
elsa, the hilt of a sword.
entrambi, both.
erario, the treasury.
erba, grass.
erboso, grassy.
erede, the heir.
erode, hero.
errante, wandering.
erto, steep, ascent.
estate, summer season.
età, age.
etale, age.
eteree, ethereal.

Faccia, face.

falce, scythe.
fallo, fault.
fame, hunger.
farfalla, butterfly.
faula, fairy.
fatica, fatigue.
fato, fate, destiny.
favella, discourse,
speech.
fede, faith.
ferro, iron.
fiamma, flame.
fianco, side.
fiato, breath.
fico, fig.
fidanza, trust, hope,
figura, figure, shape.
figliuolo, son.
fiéro, cruel, savage.
fiévole, feeble, weak.
fiore, flower.
fiocco, tassel, flake of
snow.
fischietta, whistling.
florido, flowery.
folla, crowd.
forte, strong.
frettoloso, hasty.
fulgido, bright.
fumo, smoke.
fune, a rope.
fuoco, fire.
furibondo, like a mad-
man.

Gallo, a cock.
gelo, ice.
gelido, frozen.
gemito, groan.
gemebondo, groaning.
genere, gender, kind.
genitore, father.
gente, people.
ginocchio, a knee.
giàja, joy, a jewel.
giorno, day.
giovane, young.
gioventù, youth.
giubilo, rejoicing.
giubilante, merry-mak-
ing.
giudizio, judgment.
giuramento, oath.

giustizia, justice.
gobbo, hunch-backed.
gola, the throat.
gota, cheek.
gradasso, a boaster.
gragnuola, hail.
gradso, fat.
grato, grate, an iron
gate.
grido, cry.
grifagno, rapacious.
guai, woe.
guancia, cheek.
guardo, look, sight.
guasto, spoil, havoc.
guerriero, warrior.
guiderdone, reward.

Ignoto, unknown.
imbandigione, setting of
dishes on the table
at a feast.
inganno, deceit, fraud.
indovina, fortune-teller.
ingegno, wit, art, skill.
intorno, about.
inverno, winter.
invidia, envy.

Là, there.
labbro, lip.
lacrima, a tear.
ladro, thief.
laggiù, below.
larva, ghost.
lato, side.
lavoro, work.
legge, law.
legime, pulse.
lento, slow.
lettore, reader.
leve, light.
libbra, pound.
lido, bank, shore.
lieto, merry, cheerful.
lieve, lightly.
lingua, tongue, lan-
guage.
lite, strife.
logoro, worn out.
lordo, dirty.
lucente, shining.
luce, light.

lingo, long.
luogo, place.
lusinghiéro, flattering.
lustro, lustre.

Macilente, thin.
magia, magic.
maglia, mail, armor, a net.

magro, lean.
male, ill.

malattia, sickness.

malore, ill.

malora, ruin.

mantó, cloak.

mare, sea.

marito, husband.

mariuolo, a cheat.

mascella, jaw-bone.

masnade, a crowd of soldiers.

meno, less.

mente, mind.

mensa, table.

mentre, whilst.

mercanzia, goods.

merletti, lace.

meschinello, poor.

mestizia, melancholy.

mesto, sad.

meta, moiety.

mezzo, middle, midst.

migliadia, thousands.

minestra, soup.

miséria, misery.

modo, manner.

moglie, wife.

molle, tender.

moneta, money.

mondo, world.

morso, bit.

montagna, mountain.

morte, death.

moto, motion.

motteggiatore, a jester.

mulino, wind-mill.

Nano, a dwarf.

naso, nose.

natále, nativity.

nato, son, child.

nave, ship.

ne, of it, of them.

nebbia, mist, fog.

nemico, enemy.

nequizia, wickedness.

néve, snow.

niénte, nothing.

noia, weariness.

noce, walnut-tree.

notte, night.

nozze, marriage.

nube, cloud.

nuvola, cloud.

Occulto, hidden.

olezzo, odor.

oltre, besides.

ombra, shadow.

onda, wave.

ora, an hour, now, at present.

orgoglio, haughtiness.

ordine, order.

oriente, east.

orma, track, trace.

orologio, watch.

oro, gold.

orso, bear.

oscuro, obscure, dark.

osso, bone.

ostello, tavern.

Pace, peace.

paese, country.

palagio, palace.

pálma, palm.

palude, marsh.

pánca, bench.

paragóne, comparison.

parére, opinion.

pári, equally.

paróla, word.

parróco, pastor.

páscó, pasture.

pásqua, easter, pass-over.

passéggio, a walk.

pásto, food.

pátto, bargain.

pazzia, folly.

pázzo, mad.

péggio, worse.

péna, punishment.

pendó, painful.

pensiero, thought.

péntola, pot.

perché, why, because.

pericolo, danger.

perénne, perennial.

péscó, fish.

péssimo, worst.

pétto, breast.

pézzo, piece.

pío, pious.

piáno, plain.

piánto, a tear.

pidzza, square.

piccino, little one.

pietra, stone.

pigióne, house-rent.

pioggia, rain.

pittóre, painter.

piúma, down, feathers.

póco, little.

podágra, the gout.

podére, farm, power.

podestà, power, dominion.

porégio, hill.

pót, then.

poiché, since.

pólvère, dust.

pomeridiane, post-meridian.

pórcó, hog.

pórpóra, purple.

portaménte, carriage.

poténza, power.

potére, power.

poltróne, poltroon.

pázzo, well.

práto, meadow.

prédica, sermon.

prémio, recompense.

prémstra, importance.

presciúto, ham.

préssó, near.

prénce, prince.

primavera, spring.

progetto, project.

prodézza, prowess, valor.

próprío, proper.

pugnále, poniard.

páre, yet.

Quà, here.

quaggiù, down here.

quálche, some.

qualunque, whoever.
quarésima, lent.
quási, almost.
quassù, here above.

Rádo, rare, scarce.
rággio, beam, ray.
ragióne, reason, faculty.
rámò, branch.
ráme, copper.
rè, king.
redmé, kingdom.
redína, rein of a bridle.
regádo, present, gift.
regína, queen.
rególa, rule, regimen.
ricchézza, riches.
ridénte, smiling.
rimembránza, remembrance.
rió, crook, wicked.
ripiéno, full.
ríso, laughter.
ritráto, portrait.
ríva, shore.
rózzo, rough.
romíta, hermitess.
rugiáda, dew.
ruggine, rust.

Sággio, sage, wise.
sála, a hall.
saláme, sausage.
salíce, willow-tree.
sángue, blood.
sappiénte, learned.
sásso, stone.
scále, stairs.
scápòlo, not married.
scárpa, a shoe.
scárso, rare.
scémpro, simple.
schérno, railery.
schiaffo, a box or cuff on the ear.
schiera, a troop.
sconfitta, defeat.
scopérta, discovery.
scúdo, a shield.
scúro, dark.
sdégno, anger.
sè, himself, herself.
scéolo, a century.

sécco, dry.
séya, saw.
ségno, sign.
segreto, secret.
selva, wood.
sembidnze, face, look.
sémpre, always.
senno, judgment.
senso, sense.
sentiero, path.
seta, silk.
simile, equal.
síto, situation, seat.
scáve, sweet, agreeable.
sógno, a dream.
sólito, accustomed.
sómmo, top, height.
sónno, sleep.
sórcio, a mouse.
sorríso, smile.
sórté, destiny.
sospíro, a sigh.
sótto, under.
spáda, a sword.
spásso, amusement.
spécia, sort.
spéme, hope.
speránza, hope.
spéssò, often.
spína, a thorn.
spóglia, clothes.
spónda, shore.
spórco, dirty.
squallóre, paleness.
stanchézza, weariness.
stélla, star.
stivále, boot.
strépito, noise.
stréga, witch.
súbilo, quick.
súcco, juice, sap.
suálo, earth, ground.
suóno, sound, noise.

Tále, such, like.
tárde, late.
tázza, a cup.
tedéscò, a German.
téma, fear.
ténebre, darkness.
térra, earth.
téstá, the head.
tóro, bull.

tórtora, a turtle-dove.
tósto, quick.
trà, between.
tréce, tress of hair.
trébolo, sorrow, a thistle.
tróno, throne.
tútto, all.

Uccello, bird.
uffizio, office.
uómini, men.
úsce, passage.

Vacca, cow.
vágo, fine, handsome.
viápo, lightning.
váno, vain, empty.
vásò, vessel, pot.
vecchio, an old man.
véce, instead.
vélo, veil.
véltro, a grayhound.
vénto, wind.
ventúra, fortune, luck.
vergógna, shame.
véro, winter.
véro, truth.
speróné, gallery.
vestíto, clothes.
vézzo, pastime, pleasure.
vía, way, road.
victò, near.
villággio, village.
viltà, cowardice.
vínte, vanquished, persuaded.
vístá, sight.
víso, face.
víta, life.
vittória, victory.
vivánda, victuals.
vóglia, mind, desire.
vólo, flight.
vólpe, fox.
volpíno, cunning.
vóltá, turn, revolution.
vólto, face.

Zingara, gypsy.
zimbello, allurement.
zító, hush, silence.
zólla, clod, lump.
zóppo, lame.

ENGLISH AND ITALIAN VOCABULARY.

Accident, *accidente*.
 acquaintance, *conoscenza*.
 act (action), *atto*.
 admirable, *ammirabile*.
 advantage, *vantaggio*.
 adversity, *avversità*.
 advocate, *avvocato*.
 age, *età, secolo*.
 ago, a while ago, long ago, *qualche tempo fa, molto tempo fa*.
 agreeable, *piacevole*.
 almighty, *onnipotente*.
 aloud, *forte*.
 although, *benchè*.
 always, *sempre*.
 ambition, *ambizione*.
 ancient, *anziano*.
 anger, *sdegno*.
 answer, *risposta*.
 appearance, *appareanza, faccia*.
 apple, *pomo or mela*.
 architect, *architetto*.
 army, *esercito*.
 art, *arte*.
 assiduous, *assiduo*.
 astonishment, *stupore*.
 auditors, *ascoltatori*.
 author, *autore*.
 away, *via*.

Back, *dorso*.
 baker, *fornaio*.
 baldness, *calvizza*.
 balloon, *pallone*.
 banker, *banchiere*.
 bargain, *contratto*.
 base, *vile*.
 battle, *battaglia*.
 beard, *barba*.
 beautiful, *bello*.
 beauty, *beltà*.
 because, *perchè*.

bed, *letto*.
 beggar, *mendicante*.
 behind, *per di dietro*.
 behold, *ecco*.
 bell, *campana*.
 benefit, *beneficio*.
 better, *migliore*.
 birth, *natività*.
 bishop, *vescovo*.
 black, *nero*.
 body, *corpo*.
 bold, *ardito*.
 bouquet, *mazzo di fiori*.
 breakfast, *colazione*.
 broth, *brodo*.
 burst (of laughter), *scoppiare delle risa*.
 business, *affare*.

Cabbage, *cavolo*.
 cabinet-maker, *ebanista*.
 calm, *calma*.
 candle, *candela*.
 caricature, *caricatura*.
 carriage, *carrizza*.
 cause, *causa*.
 certainly, *certo*.
 chance, *ventura*.
 change, *mutazione*.
 charming, *affascinante*.
 chimney, *cammino*.
 chair, *sedia*.
 character, *carattere*.
 charitable, *caritatevole*.
 child, *fanciullo*.
 chin, *mento*.
 circle, *circolo*.
 civil, *civile*.
 clear, *chiaro*.
 clever, *abile*.
 climate, *clima*.
 cloak, *mantello*.
 coast, *costa*.
 coat, *vestito*.
 conducive, *profittevole*.

confessor, *confessore*.
 consequence, *conseguenza*.
 contrary, *contrario*.
 conquest, *conquista*.
 copper, *rame*.
 correct, *corretto*.
 country, *paese or patria*.
 coward, *poltrone*.
 crazy, *pazzo*.
 crime, *delitto*.
 crowd, *turba*.
 cruel, *crudel*.
 cup, *coppa, tazza*.
 cupidity, *cupidigia*.
 custom, *costume*.

Dangerous, *pericolosa*.
 day, *giorno*.
 debt, *dibetto*.
 decay, *declinazione*.
 decent, *decente*.
 defeat, *sconfitta*.
 defiance, *disfida*.
 desire, *desiderio*.
 despite, *dispetto*.
 despotic, *dispotico*.
 difference, *differenza*.
 difficult, *difficile*.
 discovery, *scoperta*.
 disease, *malattia*.
 distance, *distanza*.
 doctor, *dottore*.
 dress, *gonna*.
 dry, *secco*.

Early, *mattutino*.
 eclipse, *eclissi*.
 effect, *effetto*.
 eloquence, *eloquenza*.
 employment, *impiego*.
 empire, *impero*.
 end, *fine*.
 endurance, *sofferenza*.
 enemy, *nemico*.

ensuing, *sequente*.
enterprise, *intrapresa*.
entirely, *interamente*.
envy, *invidia*.
eternal, *eterno*.
evidently, *palpabilmente*.
ever, *sempre, tuttavia*.
executioner, *carnefice*.
eye, *occhio*.
eyebrows, *ciiglia*.
eyelids, *palpebre*.

Face, *faccia*.
false, *falso*.
falsehood, *menzogna*.
fancy, *fantasia*.
farmer, *fattore*.
fat, *grasso*.
fault, *fallò*.
favor, *favore*.
fear, *timore*.
feather, *piuma*.
feature, *fattèzza*.
fellow, *uguale, compagno*.
fellow-citizen, *concittadino*.
few, *poco*.
fine, *fino*.
finger, *dito*.
fire, *fucò*.
firebrand, *tizzone*.
fleet, *flotta*.
flock, *gregge*.
flower, *fiore*.
fog, *nebbia*.
fool, *matto*.
forehead, *fronte*.
foreigner, *forestiero*.
fork, *forca*.
fox, *volpe*.
fruit, *frutto*.
fury, *furia*.

General, *generale*.
genius, *genio*.
gentle, *gentile*.
gentleman, *gentiluomo*.
girl, *fanciulla*.
glass, *vetro*.
glory, *gloria*.
gloves, *guanti*.
goodness, *bontà*.
grandchild, *nipotino*.

grandfather, *avo* or *nonno*.
grandmother, *ava* or *nonna*.
grain, *grano*.
grateful, *grato*.
grief, *dolore*.
grocer, *droghiere, bottegaio*.
gross, *grasso*.
guide, *guida*.
guilty, *colpevole*.
guinea, *ghinea*.

Hail, *gragnuola*.
hair, *capello*.
happiness, *felicità*.
hare, *lepre*.
haste, *prezura*.
head, *testa, capo*.
heaven, *cielo*.
health, *salute*.
heart, *cuore* or *còre*.
heavy, *pesante*.
heel, *calcagno*.
here, *quà, qui*.
hero, *eroe*.
high, *alto*.
hip, *anca*.
historian, *istórico* or *storico*.
hither, *qui o quà*.
home, *dimora*.
homely, *rozzo*.
hope, *speranza*.
how, *come*.
human, *umano*.
humble, *umile*.
hunger, *fame*.

Idea, *idea*.
idle, *pigro*.
ill, *male*.
immediate, *immediato*.
indolence, *indolenza*.
infinite, *infinità*.
influence, *influenza*.
ingenious, *ingegnoso*.
inhabitant, *abitante*.
inheritor, *erede*.
injury, *torto*.
inn, *albergo*.
inquisitive, *curioso*.

instrument, *istrumento*.

Joke, *burla*.
journey, *viaggio*.
joy, *gioia*.
judge, *giudice*.
judgment, *guidizio*.
just, *giusto*.

Key, *chiave*.
kingdom, *regno*.
kitchen, *cucina*.
knife, *coltello*.
knowledge, *cognizione*.

Labor, *lavoro*.
lace, *merlètto*.
lame, *zoppo*.
language, *lingua*.
large, *grande*.
laughter, *riso*.
law, *legge*.
lawyer, *legista*.
leaf, *foglia*.
least, *minimo*.
leg, *gamba*.
lie, *menzogna*.
life, *vita*.
light, *lume*.
lightning, *lampo*.
lion, *leone*.
lip, *labbro*.
lock-maker, *chiavajuolo*.
loss, *perdita*.
loud, *alto*.
love, *amore*.

Maid, *fanciulla*.
majesty, *maestà*.
manner, *maniera*.
marriage, *sposalizio*.
marvelous, *maraviglioso*.
mask, *maschera*.
master, *maestro*.
meal, *farina*.
meat, *carne*.
medicine, *medicina*.
merriment, *allegria*.
midst, *mezzo*.
mind, *spirito, mente*.
mindful, *diligente*.
minister, *ministro*.

miserable, *miserabile*.
 miser, *avaro*.
 misery, *miséria*.
 misfortune, *sventura*.
 mistake, *errore*.
 money, *danaro*.
 motion, *moto*.
 mouthful, *una boccata*.
 moon, *luna*.
 much, *molto*.

Nail, *chiodo*.
 name, *nome*.
 napkin, *salvietta*.
 natural, *naturale*.
 naughty, *cattivello*.
 navigator, *navigatore*.
 near, *vicino*.
 necessary, *necessario*.
 neck, *collo*.
 need, *bisogno*.
 neighbor, *vicino*.
 neither, *nè*.
 new, *nuove*.
 next, *seguinte*.
 night, *notte*.
 no, *no, non*.
 noble, *nobile*.
 north, *setteentrione*.
 nose, *naso*.
 notice, *notizia*.

Oats, *avena*.
 object, *oggetto*.
 obstinate, *ostinato*.
 occupation, *occupazione*.
 odd, *impari*.
 often, *spesso*.
 opinion, *opinione*.
 order, *ordine*.
 ostrich, *struzzo*.

overseer, *soprintendente*.

Page, *paggio*.
 panegyric, *panegirico*.
 painter, *pittore*.
 patriarch, *padrigno*.
 paper, *carta*.
 paradox, *paradosso*.
 parrot, *pappagallo*.
 peace, *pace*.
 perfidious, *perfido*.
 perhaps, *forse*.
 person, *persona*.
 picture, *pittura*.
 piece, *pezzo*.
 pike, *picca*.
 pity, *pietà*.
 plate, *piatto*.
 pleasure, *piacere*.
 plenty, *abbondante*.
 portrait, *ritratto*.
 poverty, *povertà*.
 power, *potenza*.
 precipitately, *precipitamente*.
 pretty, *leggiadro*.
 price, *valore*.
 pride, *orgoglio*.
 prisoner, *prigioniero*.
 prompt, *pronto*.
 promise, *promessa*.
 purple, *porpora*.
 purse, *borsa*.

Quarrel, *querela*.
 queer, *strano*.
 quick, *vivo*.
 quite, *tutt' affatto*.

Remembrance, *memoria*.

rich, *ricco*.

Secret, *segreto*.
 signal, *segno*.
 sink, *sentina*.
 sleeve, *manico*.
 sleepiness, *sonno*.
 smile, *riso*.
 soil, *sudò*.
 soldier, *soldato*.
 solidity, *solidezza*.
 spectacles, *occhiali*.
 step, *passo*.
 strife, *lite*.
 superstitious, *superstizioso*.
 surprise, *maraviglia*.

Tear, *lagrima*.
 thief, *ladro*.
 thirst, *sete*.
 title, *titolo*.
 treasury, *erario*.
 truth, *verità*.
 tyrant, *tiranno*.

Umbrella, *ombrello*.

Vase, *vaso*.
 vice, *vizio*.
 victory, *vittoria*.

Walk, *passaggio*.
 weariness, *stanchezza*.
 wit, *ingegno*.
 witness, *testimonio, monumento*.
 work, *opera*.
 word, *parola, detto*.
 wound, *cicatrice*.

I N D E X.

INDEX.

THE NUMBERS REFER TO THE PAGES.

A.

A. 22, 40, 44, 91, 123, 163.
Accent, grave, 3, 29, 219.
Active verbs, 188; variation of, 188; agreement of participles of, 188; change in tenses of, 188; become passive, 205; become pronominal, 209. (See "Verbs.")
Adjectives, 61; remarks on, 64; agreement of, 32, 64, 69, 84; termination of, 61; plural of, 32, 61; number, gender, etc., of, 32, 61; used as nouns, 19, 62; nouns used as, 62; invariable, 62, 70; signification of, altered, 64; suppression of syllables in, 63; elision of, 64; place of, 64; comparatives of, 67; superlatives of, 73; formation of superlatives, 73; of quantity, 62; numeral, 82; possessive pronouns, 97; demonstrative pronouns, 103; indefinite pronouns, 109, 115; past participles and, 73; adverbs and (see "Adverbs") interjections and, 183.
Adverbs, 171; formation of, 123, 172; the comparisons of, 172; termination in *mente*, 78; of time, 172; place, 173; order, quantity, quality, affirmation, negation, doubt, 174; comparison, interrogation, choice, demonstration, 175; adjectives and, 172, 175; adjectives used as, 175; article and, 20; elision of, 172.
Adverbial phrases, 123, 124, 178.
"All," 111, 112; used as adverb, 112.
Alphabet, Italian, 1.
Alquanto, 63.
Altro, 110, 111; *altrui*, 116; *altri*, as a noun, 116.
Amare, conjugation of, 188; its passive form, 204. (See "Verbs.")
Andare, 160, 166; its compounds, 166; Italianisms with, 167; conjugation of, 215; conjunctive pronouns and, 215. (See "Verbs.")
Apostrophe, 3.
Article, 16; agreement of, 18; indefinite, 19, 43, 83; definite, 17; variations of definite, 17; use of, 18, 19, 20; omission of, 18, 19; elision of, 17, 18; exercise upon, 20; union with prepositions, 21, 41, 125; suppression of, 74; partitive,

41-43; numerals and, 83, 86; possessive pronouns and, 20, 86, 99; transposition of, 106; preposition *in* and, 131; verbs and, 20; adverbs and, 20.
As . . . as, 69, 175.
Augmentatives, 76, 81; formation of, 76; double, 79; irregular 79; frequent use of, 81.
Auxiliary verbs, 141, 186. (See "Verbs.")
Avère, 98, 141, 161, 209, 213; conjugation of, 186; used idiomatically, 143. (See "Verbs.")

B.

"Be," auxiliary verb. (See "*Essere*.")
Bello, 63.
"Better," as adjective and adverb, 67.
Bisognare, 148.
"Both," 85, 86.
Buono, 63.

C.

Cardinal numbers, 82.
Cases, 15, 16; of nouns, 40; governed by prepositions, 121.
Che, 68, 90-93, 110, 162; interrogative, 91, 92; the subjunctive and, 93, 155; connection with other words, 93; the present participle and, 162.
Chi, 90-93, 110, 116.
Ci, *vi*, etc., 48, 51, 56, 100, 118, 142, 148, 149, 162, 211, 213, 215, 247.
Ciò, 104.
Come, 69, 70.
Comparison of adjectives, 67; of adverbs, 172.
Compound sounds, 3.
Con (with article, 22, 24), 129, 180, 164.
Conjugation of verbs. (See "Verbs.")
Conjunctions, 179; in common use, 180; phrases, 181; the subjunctive mood and, 156.
Conjunctive pronouns, 48, 55, 57, 97, 209; with *andare*, 215; *stare*, 219; *dolere*, 221; *sedere*, 228; *tacere*, 229; *temere*, 280; *calere*, 247.

Consonants, sounds of, 2; double, 4; when doubled, 58.
 Contraction of *lo, gli, etc.*, 22 (see "Union of Articles and Prepositions," 22); of participles, 161.
Conversazione, 21, 26, 31, 39, 46, 54, 60, 63, 71, 76, 81, 83, 95, 103, 108, 114, 120, 128, 134, 140, 145, 151, 158, 165, 170, 178, 185.
Costui, colui, 106.
Così, 69, 70.
Cotale. (See "*Tale*.")
Cotanto. (See "*Tanto*.")
Cotesto, 104.
Cui, 90, 91, 162; the article and, 92

D.

Da, 22, 40-44, 121-126, 133, 147.
Dare, 166; conjugation of, 216; its compounds, 166, 216. (See "*Verbs*.")
 Days of the week, 39.
 Declension, 15; of articles, 22-24; of nouns, 22-24, 41; of possessive pronouns, 98.
 Defective verbs, 246; list of, 246; variation of, 247. (See "*Verbs*.")
 Definite article. (See "*Article*.")
 Demonstrative adjective pronouns, 103; added to possessive, 105.
Di, 22, 40-44, 121-126, 163; when used for "than," 68. *Di*, 28.
 Diminutives, 76; formation of, 77; irregular, 79; added to verbs, 79; frequent use of, 81.
 Diphthongs, 2.
 Disjunctive possessive pronouns, 97.
Doctore, 148, 149, 222.

E.

E, sounds of, 2.
 Elision, 3; of articles, 17, 18, 22, 23, 85; of pronouns, 52, 53; of adjectives, 64; of adverbs, 172; of verbs, 189, 196.
È, use of, 56; its inflections, 11, 56.
 Elliptical phrases, 42.
 Epochs, 88.
 Equality, comparative of, 69.
Essere, 141, 142, 161; conjugation of, 187; its own auxiliary, 142; its formation of the passive, 142, 204; past participle, 187; used impersonally, 142, 147, 212; infinitive and, 161; neuter verbs and, 206; pronominal verbs and, 208. (See "*Verbs*.")
 Etymology, 1, 15.
 Euphony, 17, 26, 33, 43, 49, 52, 55, 57, 64, 118, 125.
 Exercises, mnemonic, 16, 21, 23, 32, 40, 43, 47, 48, 55, 61, 67, 72, 79, 82, 89, 96, 103, 109, 116, 121, 123, 135, 141, 146, 153, 159, 166, 171, 179.
 Exercise in pronunciation, 4, 5-15.

Exercises for translation, 20, 25, 31, 38, 45, 53, 59, 65, 71, 75, 87, 94, 102, 107, 113, 119, 127, 133, 139, 144, 151, 157, 164, 169, 173, 184.
 Expletives, 149.

F.

Fare, 163; conjugation of, 217; its compounds, 217; Italianisms with, 168. (See "*Verbs*.")
Filo, 34.
 First conjugation, 147, 166, 188; irregular verbs, 163, 214. (See "*Verbs*.")
 Future tense, 155, 188; contraction of, 214.

G.

Gender, 15, 18; of nouns, 27, of adjectives, 32, 61; of augmentatives, etc., 76; of possessive pronouns, 97; of demonstrative pronouns, 104; participles, 161.
 Gerund, 159, 162. (See "*Verbs*.")
Gli, as article, 17; elision of, 18; contraction of, 22; as pronoun, 48, 51, 55, 100, 162, 247; joined to *lo*, etc., 56.
Già, adverb, 173.
Giù, etc., 56.
 Grammar, Italian, 1.

H.

H used with *c* before *e* and *i*, 2, 73, 150; in the formation of plurals, 83, 84.
 "Have," auxiliary verb. (See "*Avere*.")

I.

I (the sign of plural), 23, 32; exceptions, 33; elision of, 18, 189, 195; addition of, 200. (See "*Il*.")
 Idioms, Italian, 233.
Il, *i*, 17; contraction of, 23; as pronouns, 55, 98, 162; suppression of, 74; used for prepositions, 42.
 Imperative mood, 160, 214; pronouns after, 51; irregular verbs and, 214.
 Imperfect tense, 150, 156.
 Impersonal verbs, 147, 155, 210, 212; how varied, 210; list of, 147, 211; *essere* and, 147, 212; pronouns and, 49, 148. (See "*Verbs*.")
In, 129, 133, 163; where placed, 180; union with article, 22, 131; becomes *ne*, 22.
 Indefinite adjective pronouns, 109, 115. (See "*Pronouns*.")
 Indefinite article. (See "*Article*.")
 Indicative mood, 154, 156, 162, 196, 198, 201; irregular verbs and, 214.
 Inferiority, comparative of, 68.
 Infinitive mood, 159; article and, 20, 147; pronouns and, 57; terminations of, 147; used as a noun, 147, 190; as third person, 160; present participle and, 163; *essere* and, 161; *lui, lei*, and, 160; imperative and, 160; contraction of, 214.

Interjections, 182; in common use, 182; derivation of some, 183; agreement of, 183.

Interrogative pronouns, 50, 91; phrases, 50, 91.

Irregular plurals, 38.

Irregular verbs, 168, 214; how varied, 214; first conjugation, 214; second, 219-233; third, 234-241; table of, 242. (See "Verbs.")

Issimo, 73, 74.

Italian alphabet, 1; grammar, 1; idioms, 263; proverbs, 259.

Italianisms, with possessive pronouns, 100; with *tutto*, etc., 112; with *andare*, *dare*, 187; *stare*, *fare*, 188.

L.

La, 17; its plural, 17; contraction of, 23; as pronoun, 55, 162; as inflection of *ella*, 11, 56; before verbs, 56; its place, 57; before numerals, 83; elision of, 18, 56. *Là*, adverb, 173.

Le, 17, 18; contraction of, 23; as pronoun, 48, 51, 55, 162; before verbs, 56; its place, 57; before numerals, 83; elision of, 18.

Letters, 1; sounds of, 1.

Li, article, 17; as pronoun, 55; before verbs, 56; its place, 57. *Lì*, adverb, 173.

Lo, 17; its plural, 17; contraction of, 22; as pronoun, 55, 162; before verbs, 56; its place, 57; used for preposition, 42; elision of, 17, 22, 56.

Loro, 48, 52, 97.

M.

Màno, 125.

Méno, *téno*, *séno*, etc., 51.

Méno or *máncio*, 17, 68, 70, 74, 172, 174.

Mézzo, 63.

Monosyllables, union of, 55, 57.

Months of the year, 39.

N.

Names, proper, 19, 35, 41, 65.

Né, 51, 55, 118, 142, 149, 162, 218, 215, 219. (See "*In*.")

Neuter verbs, 206; how varied, 206; become pronominal, 209. (See "Verbs.")

Non, 56, 58, 117, 149, 160, 171.

"Nothing," 93, 110, 116, 117, 174.

Nouns, 28; general remarks on, 29; gender of, 27; plural of, 32; double plurals, 37; irregular plurals, 38; cases of, 40; terminations of, 27-38; proper, 19, 35, 41, 65; abstract, 19; invariable, 83; relation expressed by *di*, *a*, *da*, 40; variation of nouns, 41; words used as, 19; possessive pronouns used as, 98; infinitive used as, 20, 147, 160; numeral adjectives and, 83; nouns used as ad-

jectives, 62; suppression of the noun after *uno*, 85; exercise upon the noun, 88.

Number, 15; of articles, 17; of nouns, 32; of adjectives, 32, 61; pronouns, 36, 97.

Numeral adjectives, 82; how divided, 82; cardinal numbers, 82; ordinal, 84; fractional and collective, 84.

O.

O, sounds of, 2.

Objective, repetition of, 66.

"Of," rendered by *il* or *lo*, 42.

Ogni, 109-111; *ognidi*, 109.

Onde, 98; *dónde*, 173, 176.

Ora, 83, 172; *ognóra*, 109, 172.

Ordinal numbers, 84.

Orthoepy, 1.

Orthography, 1.

Ossó, 34.

P.

Paradigms of verbs. (See "Verbs.")

Pàri, 62.

Participles, 161; agreement of, 161; place of 64. Present, 162; how expressed, 162; of active verbs, 188; prepositions and, 163; infinitive and, 163; *che* and, 162. Past, 161; of active verbs, 188; of passive, 204; of neuter, 206; *avere*, 161; *essere*, 142, 161, 187. Pronouns and, 58, 162; irregular verbs and, 214; as qualitative adjectives, 73; contraction of, 161.

Particles, 41, 43, 211; expletive, 149.

Parts of speech, 15.

Passive verbs, 147, 204; much used, 147; formation of, 142, 204; how active verbs become passive, 147, 205; past participle of, 204.

Per, with the article, 24; contraction of, 24; as preposition, 122, 129, 131.

Perché, 175, 181.

Perfect definite, 150, 192, 194, 214.

Personal pronouns. (See "Pronouns.")

Phrases, adverbial, 123, 124, 176; conjunctive, 181; idiomatical, 143, 263; interrogative, 50, 91.

Più, 17, 67, 70, 74, 172, 174.

Plural of articles, 17; nouns and adjectives, 32, 61; pronouns, 36, 97; irregular, 38.

Poetical pieces, 176, 183.

Possessive pronouns. (See "Pronouns.")

Prepositions, 121, 129, 135; in common use, 122; union of articles and, 22, 41, 125; use of various, 187; after personal pronouns, 187; present participles and, 163; repetition of prepositions, 85.

Pronominal verbs, 208; variation of, 208 (see "Verbs"); pronouns and, 51.

Pronouns, 46; place of, 49, 57; suppression of, 49; transposition of, 58; apposition of, 49; elision of, 52, 56; impersonal verbs and, 49; pronominal verbs and, 51; infinitive and, 57; past parti

ciples and, 58; euphonic rules, 57; doubling of consonants, 58. Personal pronouns in the nominative, 46, 49; in the objective, 47, 50, 55; verbs and, 148; past participles and, 162; prepositions and, 187. Possessive adjective, 20, 97; plural of, 86, 97; division of, 97; variation of, 98; agreement of, 98; personal pronouns and, 99; as nouns, 98; as Italianisms, 100; as expletives, 149; use of, with article, 20, 98, 99; demonstratives added to, 106. Indefinite, 109, 115; used in singular, 109, in plural, 110. Relative, 89, 97. Demonstrative, 103; added to possessive, 105. Interrogative, 50, 91. Conjunctive, 48, 55, 97, 209, 215, 219. Disjunctive, 97. Reflective, 51.

Pronunciation, 1; exercise in, 4; reading-exercise in, 5-15.

Proprio, 98.

Prosody, 1.

Proverbs, Italian, 259.

Pure, 181.

Q.

Quale, 86, 90, 116, 155, 162; use of, 91.

Quanto, 62, 69, 70.

Quello, 104.

Questo, 104-106.

R.

Reading-lessons, 5, 20, 25, 30, 37, 44, 52, 59, 66, 70, 74, 83, 94, 100, 106, 113, 118, 123, 132, 138, 143, 150, 156, 164, 169, 176, 183.

Reflective verbs, 208. (See "Pronominal Verbs.")

Regular verbs, 188; synoptical table of the variations of, 202. (See "Verbs.")

Relative pronouns, 89, 97.

S.

Se, * 47, 50, 51, 118.

Second conjugation, 192; division of, 192; first class, 192; second class, 194; irregular verbs, 219-233. (See "Verbs.")

"Self," 49.

Si, 51, 57, 100, 117, 147, 149, 162, 205, 209, 219, 221, 238, 229, 230, 247.

Signor, *Signora*, etc., 19, 53, 99; elision of, 19.

"Some," 43, 110, 112.

Somma, 73.

Sopra, used for *su*, 24.

Sounds of vowels, 2; of consonants, 2; of *c*, 2; of *o*, 2; compound, 3.

Speech, parts of, 15.

Sta, abbreviation of *qu'ista*, 105

Stare, 160, 166; conjugation of, 218; its compounds, 166, 219; Italianisms with, 167; conjunctive pronouns and, 219.

Stia, as particle, 73.

Su, with article, 22, 24; contraction of, 24; preposition, 122; *sopra* used for, 24.

Subjunctive mood, 153; when used, 154; tenses of, 156; irregular verbs and, 214; conjunctions and, 156.

Substantives. (See "Nouns.")

"Such," 62, 106, 110, 112.

Superiority, comparative of, 67.

Superlatives of adjectives, 73; of adverbs, 172; of interjections, 183.

Syllables, 4; termination of, 4; exceptions, 4; union of, 55, 57; suppression of, 63.

Synoptical table of regular verbs, 202.

Syntax, 1; of verbs, 146.

T.

Table, synoptical, of regular verbs, 202; of irregular verbs, 242. (See "Verbs")

Tale, 86, 62, 106, 110, 112.

Tanto, 69, 110.

Tenses of dependent verbs in a compound sentence, 155.

"Than," rendered by *di* and *che*, etc., 68; by *come* and *così*, 69.

Third conjugation, 196; division into three classes, 196; first class, 196; second, 196; third, 201; irregular verbs, 234-241; list of, 234.

Titles, 19, 56, 99.

"To be hungry," "thirsty," etc., 143.

Tutto, 110, 149; its agreement with the noun, 111; as an Italianism, 112.

U.

Uomini, 36.

Unipersonal verbs, 210. (See "Impersonal Verbs.")

Uno, *un*, *una*, 16, 43, 85, 110; when suppressed, 85; elision of, 85.

Uscire, 42, 125; conjugation of, 240

V.

Variations of regular verbs, 202.

Venire, 125, 142, 148, 160; conjugation of, 241.

Verbs, 141; syntax of, 146; general rules, 147; irregularities of, 214; moods of (see "Infinitive," "Indicative," "Imperative," and "Subjunctive Moods"); tenses of (see "Imperfect," "Perfect Definite," and "Future Tenses"); participles of (see "Participles"). Place of the verb, 149, 160; terminations of, 147. Article and verbs, 20, 147. Nouns

* *Se* (himself) was formerly written with an accent, — *sì*.

and verbs, 20, 147, 159, 160. Pronouns and verbs, 49, 51, 57, 91, 148. Union with diminutives, 79. Auxiliary verbs, 141, 136; conjugation of *avere*, 186 (see "*Avère*"); of *essere*, 187 (see "*Essere*"). Regular verbs, 188. Active verbs, 189 (see "*Active Verbs*"). First conjugation, 188; conjugation of *amare*, 188; of *cercare*, 190; of *pregiare*, 191. Second conjugation, 192; conjugation of *temere*, 192; of *tessere*, 194. Third conjugation, 196; conjugation of *sentire*, 196; of *esistere*, 196; of *cucire*, 200; of *abborrire*, 201. Synopsis of the variations of regular verbs, 202. Passive verbs, 204 (see "*Passive Verbs*"); conjugation of *essere amato*, 204. Neuter verbs, 206 (see "*Neuter Verbs*"); conjugation of *partire*, 206. Pronominal or reflective verbs, 208 (see "*Pronominal Verbs*"); conjugation of *pentirsi*, 208. Unipersonal verbs, 210 (see "*Impersonal Verbs*"); conjugation of *piovere*, 210; of *essere* (unipersonally used), 212. Irregular verbs, 214 (see "*Irregular Verbs*"). First conjugation, 214; conjugation of *andare*, 215; of *dare*, 216; of *fare*, 217; of *stare*, 218 (see "*Andare*," "*Dare*," "*Fare*," "*Stare*"). Second conjugation, 219; conjugation of *cadere*, 220; of *dissuadere*, 220; of *dolere*, 221; of *dovere*, 222 (see "*Dovere*"); of *giacere*, 223; of *parire*, *persuadere*, *piacere*, 224; of *potere*, 225; of *rimanere*, 226; of *sapere*, 227; of *sedere*, 228; of *tacere*, 229; of *tenere*, 230; of *valere*, 231; of

vedere, 232; of *volere* (see "*Volere*"), 233. Third conjugation, 234; conjugation of *dire*, 234; of *morire*, 236; of *salire*, 237; of *seguire*, 238; of *uñire*, 239; of *uscire* (see "*Uscire*"), 240; of *venire* (see "*Venire*"), 241. Table of irregular verbs, 242. Defective verbs, 246; conjugation of *calere*, 247; of *colere* or *cólere*, *lecere* and *licere* or *lécere* and *licere*, *pavere*, *silere*, 248; of *solere*, *stupere*, *algere*, 249; of *angere*, *arrigere*, *capere*, 250; of *chérere*, *convellere*, 251; of *fidere*, 252; of *lucere*, *molere*, 253; of *riedere*, *serpere*, 254; of *soffolere* or *soffolgere*, *tangere*, *tollere*, 255; of *tórperere*, *urgere*, *vigere*, 256; of *gire*, 257; of *ire* and *ohre*, 258.

"Very," before participles, 73.

Vi. ci. (See "*Vi.*")

Via, 86, 147, 149.

Vocabulary, Italian-English, 266; English-Italian, 270; of exercises, 45, 54, 60, 63, 71, 75, 83, 95, 102, 108, 114, 120, 128, 131, 139, 144, 151, 157, 165, 170, 178, 186.

Volere, 148; with *ci* and *vi*, 148; conjugation of, 233.

Vosignória, 58.

Vowels, 1, 4; sounds of, 2.

W.

"Who" "which." "what," etc., 90, 91. Words union of, 21, 55, 57.

A NEW SERIES
OF
STANDARD
EDUCATIONAL WORKS,
PRINCIPALLY FOR THE STUDY OF
Foreign Languages.

PUBLISHED AND FOR SALE BY

F. W. CHRISTERN, 763 Broadway, New York,
S. R. URBINO, 13 School Street, Boston,
F. LEYPOLDT, 1323 Chestnut Street, Phila.

The object of this series is to furnish the American Student with cheap, neat and correct editions of the latest and most approved *Text Books and Modern Classical Works*, from the most elementary to the most advanced, for the study of Foreign Languages.

Upwards of *thirty* volumes have been published within the past year; and it is the desire of the Publishers that the series should be completed as speedily as is consistent with a judicious selection, and with the correctness so important in works for educational purposes.

French.

OTTO'S FRENCH CONVERSATION GRAMMAR. A new and practical method of learning the French Language. By Rev. Dr. EMIL OTTO. Thoroughly revised by F. F. BÖCHER, Instructor in French at Harvard College. 12mo., cloth. Price \$1.75.

L'INSTRUCTEUR DE L'ENFANCE. (A first Book for Children.) By L. BONCOEUR. 12mo., cloth. Price 80 cents.

ELEMENTARY FRENCH READER; or, LESSONS AND EXERCISES IN FRENCH PRONUNCIATION, for the use of American Schools. By MAD. M. GIBERT. 12mo., boards. Price 40 cents.

LUCIE; FAMILIAR CONVERSATIONS in French and English, for Children. 12mo., cloth. Price 90 cents.

NEW GUIDE TO MODERN CONVERSATION, in French and English. By WITCOMB & BELLENGER. 16mo., cloth. Price \$1.00.

SADLER'S *Cours de Versions*; or, Exercises for Translating English into French. First American from the fifteenth Paris Edition. Annotated and revised by Prof. C. F. GILLETTE. 16mo. Price \$1.25.

COLLOT'S STANDARD DICTIONARY, of the French and English Languages. 8vo. (Over 1300 pages) bound. Price \$4.00.

ÆSOP'S FABLES IN FRENCH; with a description of fifty Animals, mentioned therein, and a French and English Dictionary of all the words contained in the Work. New revised Edition. 16mo., cloth. Price 75 cents.

HISTOIRE DE LA MÈRE MICHEL ET DE SON CHAT. Par EMILE DE LA BEDOLLIÈRE. With a French and English Vocabulary. By MADAME C. R. CORSON. 16mo., cloth. Price 75 cents.

LA MÈRE L'OIE. Poésies, Chansons et Rondes Enfantsines. Avec Illustrations. (In preparation.)

PETIT TRÉSOR POÉTIQUE des Jeunes Personnes; précédé d'un traité de versification et de littérature, et de notices biographiques. Par MAD. C. R. CORSON. (In preparation.)

LA PETITE MAMAN. Comédie. Par MME. DE M. LE BRACELET. Drame. Par MADAME DE GAULLE. 12mo., paper. Price 25 cents.

LA VIEILLE COUSINE. LES RICOCHETS. Comédies. 12mo., paper. Price 25 cents.

LE PETIT ROBINSON DE PARIS. Par MADAME EUGENIE FOA. 12mo., cloth. Price 90 cents.

TROIS MOIS SOUS LA NEIGE. Journal d'un Jeune Habitant du Jura. Par JACQUES PORCHAT. 16mo., cloth. Price 90 cents. Ouvrage couronné par l'Académie Française.

L'HISTOIRE DE FRANCE. Racontée à la Jeunesse. Par M. LAMÉ FLEURY. 16mo., cloth. Price \$1.50.

LE CLOS - POMMIER. Nouvelle. Par AMÉDÉE ACHARD. 12mo., cloth. Price 90 cents.

SOIRÉES LITTÉRAIRES. Causeries de Salon. Par MADAME C. R. CORSON, (née Rollin.) 16mo., cloth. Price 80 cents.

College Series of Modern French Plays.

With English Notes, by Prof. FERDINAND BÔCHER, Instructor in French at Harvard College. 12mo.

I.

LA BATAILLE DE DAMES, ou, Un Duel en Amour.
Comédie en trois actes. Par SCRIBE ET LEGOUVÉ. Price 30 cents.

II.

LA MAISON DE PENARVAN. Comédie en quatre actes.
Par JULES SANDEAU. Price 30 cents.

III.

LA POUDRE AUX YEUX. Comédie en deux actes. Par
MM. EUGENE LABICHE, et EDOUARD MARTIN. Price 30 cents.

IV.

LES PETITS OISEAUX. Comédie en trois actes. Par
MM. EUGENE LABICHE et DELACOUR. Price 30 cents.

IN PREPARATION :

ROMAN D'UN JEUNE HOMME PAUVRE. Par
OCTAVE FEUILLET.

COLLEGE SERIES OF MODERN ENGLISH PLAYS.
With French Notes, for translating into French.

German.

OTTO'S GERMAN CONVERSATION GRAMMAR. A
new and practical method of learning the German Language. By Rev. Dr.
EMIL OTTO. Sixth Edition. 1 vol., 12mo., cloth. Price \$2.00.

INTRODUCTORY GRAMMAR OF THE GERMAN
LANGUAGE. By E. C. F. KRAUSS. 12mo., cloth. Price \$1.25.

THE GERMAN AND ENGLISH INTERPRETER.
With a literal and free translation. 12mo., cloth. Price 60 cents.

GRIEB'S DICTIONARY OF THE ENGLISH AND
GERMAN LANGUAGES. 2 vols., royal 8vo., (over 2400 pages,) half bound.
Price \$10.00.

OEHLSCHLÄGER'S PRONOUNCING GERMAN
DICTIONARY. 16mo., (841 pages) cloth. Price \$1.50.

DIE IRRLICHTER. Ein Märchen von der Verfasserin
der "PRINCESSIN ILSE." 12mo. Price 50 cents.

VERGISSMEINNICHT. Eine Arabeske von GUSTAV ZU PUTLITZ. With English Notes. 12mo. Price 40 cents.

LA RABBIATA.—DAS MÄDCHEN VON TREPPI. Zwei Novellen von PAUL HEYSE. 12mo., Price 35 cents.

THE SAME. Translated into English. (In preparation.)

IMMENSEE. Novelle von THEODOR STORM. With English Notes. 12mo. Price 40 cents.

THE SAME. Translated into English. By H. CLARK. 16mo. Price 30 cents.

THE SAME. Printed on Tinted Paper. Cloth, top gilt. Price 90 cents.

SCHILLER UND SEINE ZEIT. Von JOHANNES SCHERR. 12mo., cloth, (over 600 pages.) Price \$1.75.

THE POETRY OF GERMANY. Selections from the most celebrated Poets, translated into English verse, with the original text on the opposite page. By ALFRED BASKERVILLE. 12mo., cloth. 664 pages. Price \$2.00.

Italian.

L. B. CUORE. Italian Grammar. 12mo., cloth. Price \$2.00.

Handwritten: **Lexicon.**
Miscellaneous.

CHAUCER'S LEGENDE OF GOODE WOMEN. Edited with an introduction, and notes, glossarial and critical. By HIRAM CORSON. 16mo., cloth. Price \$1.00.

LANDMARKS OF ANCIENT HISTORY. By Miss YONGE, Author of "The Heir of Redclyffe." 16mo., cloth. Price \$1.00.

DR. RIMMER'S ELEMENTS OF DESIGN. With 36 Plates. Price \$3.00.

F. W. CHRISTERN, 763 Broadway, New York.

S. R. URBINO, 13 School Street, Boston.

F. LEYPOLDT, 1323 Chestnut Street, Phila.

Keep constantly on hand, an extensive stock of Foreign, Educational, Classical and Miscellaneous Literature.

Grammars, Dictionaries, Dialogues, in all Languages.

ORDERS FOR WORKS NOT IN STOCK PROMPTLY ATTENDED TO.

List of New Books forwarded gratis when requested.

REGULAR IMPORTATIONS FROM EUROPE.

ORDERS FORWARDED WEEKLY.

STAV

EPPI

With

is

XNE

the
ext of
c 200

Price

dated
1850

Miss

h 36

rk.

and

res

ed.

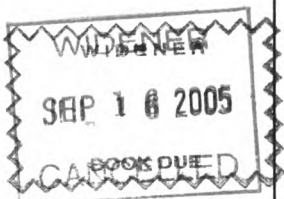


3 2044 050 962

The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does **not** exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve
library collections at Harvard.

